

# 動衝一時

## 七世不祥

上

九鷺非香——著 鳩納蘭——繪

我和他對於這世間而言，不過是一場又一場輪迴，  
但每一場輪迴裡的甜蜜與悲傷，都那麼清楚真實……



# Invitation of Flowers Introduction

---

If a weak beauty meets a bad boy, there'll always be a row of guys wanting to console the beauty.

If a well behaved lady is abandoned and cause a ruckus, it's not something unusual.

If a noble lady with power and money, whom no one wants, which guy is so dumb (to not want such a lady)?

A pity that in this world there's not so many ifs.

She isn't a weak beauty, is not well behaved and definitely not a noble lady. She's a robber.

Who would dare to dump a robber? Doesn't he want to live anymore?

"What?! You have a reason? Wait; let me go make my blade sharper. It's been a long time since I've slayed somebody. My hands are all rusty now."

## Prologue

---

I am a puff of auspicious cloud. One hundred years ago as I was drifting in front of Yue Lao's house <sup>[1]</sup>, the sloshed foggy suddenly turned me into a spiritual entity on a drunken whim. After he sobered up, he stroked his beard and tried to defend himself: "Ah, you're a puff of cloud fated for divinity. From now on, let's call you Xiao Xiang Zi." <sup>[2]</sup>

At the time, I was too naïve to notice what was wrong with the name I was given, and so I obediently nodded.

Thereafter, I donned a woman's body and bore a eunuch's name as I lived in Yue Lao's home and became the old man's helper. The foggy



gave me three meals a day plus some pocket money for snacks and drinks in exchange for my watching over the mess of red strings in the Yue Lao temple.

As time went by, it soon became hundreds of years for which I had unwittingly labored for Yue Lao. I thought that my days would continue to be spent sitting in front of his temple and counting white puffs of clouds drifting by. But I was told by everyone who came before me that a boring story would waste the readers' precious time. I therefore am going to make sure not to disappoint anyone.

That day, a nightmarish guy fell from Heaven-knows-how-far above and plunged head-first onto the carpet of red clouds in front of Yue Lao's temple, making noises just like the ones I made whenever my stomach digested food and farted air out.

Because I was dozing off at the time, I only blinked at him a few times sleepily. The boy dressed in red struggled to pull his head out of the red cloud carpet, stared straight at me, and then all of a sudden raged: "Stupid brat, stop sitting there to watch. Don't you know to come over and help me?"

His yelling woke me up. I stared wide-eyed at him for a moment: "Didn't you already get out?"

He glared at me peevishly, then stood up while brushing off his clothes before looking at me disdainfully. "One look and I knew you're a maid from the destitute Yue Lao estate. You don't even have eyes!"

I yawned lazily and wiggled my butt around for a more comfortable sitting position against the stepping stones. "Ain't got no eye boogers," I said, digging my ears, "but I have plenty of earwax. Look!" and flicked something out from my finger.

The boy leaned to the side in disgust; contempt filled his eyes. "What can come from a beggarly master but a beggarly maid?"

Even though I normally didn't like that old drunkard who went around to steal booze, he was still my boss who had been feeding me for several hundred years. At least on the surface, he was family.

Family can hate each other, but family cannot let outsiders badmouth us for even half a syllable.

Squinting my eyes, I looked the boy up and down and said, “I heard everyone from the Morning God’s estate loves to primp and preen. Among the twelve gay men there, the next is more beautiful than the one before him. I didn’t believe it at first, but you’re really opening my eyes with that getup of yours.” I watched the boy’s face turn blue with rage and gave him a smug smile. “May I ask which gay one you are?”

“How dare you!” He waved his hand to form a whip out of thin air before ruthlessly cracking it my way.

Even though I was pretty lazy and didn’t like doing anything, ever since I learned the universal truth that I’d be bullied if I weren’t strong enough, I never fell behind on my practice. After a few centuries, I could be considered to have achieved some basic magical powers. His whipping was hard and fast, but it wasn’t anything I couldn’t handle.

With that said, he cracked that thing so suddenly that I wasn’t prepared for it, and in the process, got my round fan whipped to shreds.

I completely froze.

The cost of living wasn’t high in Heaven, but Yue Lao was ridiculously stingy. After buying a few jars of wine, there was never much left of the daily allowance he gave me. This round fan was bought with the savings I’d scraped for decades. The Weaver Girl <sup>[3]</sup> only sold it to me at a discount after I begged and begged. I hadn’t even played with it for that long, and yet... and yet this bastard had gone and shredded it?

I couldn’t tell whether the surging emotions inside of me were ultimately anger or pain. All I knew was that I had to give him a good beating before I could cool down today. I rolled up my sleeves and tied back my hair – the hair I hadn’t bothered to tie for the last century.

“Come over here,” I told him as I knotted my hair. “I’ll give you two choices.”

He held the whip in his hand as he looked at me in disdain. I so wanted to wipe that smile off his face.

Patting my tightly coiled bun, I stood on the steps in front of Yue Lao’s hall and raised a finger: “One, pay me. Two, work your debt off.”

The boy sneered: “Who the hell do you think you are?”

I cracked my fingers. “I’m an ominous cloud that will curse you for life. Quake in your boots, fool.”

He raised a surprised eyebrow at my gusty resistance. “You have some nerve to challenge me when you’re nothing but a puny maidservant with only a few hundred years of cultivation...” His words hardly landed by the time I used a spell to make the thick cloud carpet under his feet sinking like a quicksand swamp. He was caught dumbfounded. While he wasn’t reacting, I flashed my sparkly white teeth and gave his chest a shove.

He was startled, but since his feet were stuck, he couldn’t move anywhere. I clung to his shoulders and smiled: “You smell so nice,” and then unhesitatingly chomped down on him...

My magical powers were beyond terrible. Here, everyone easily had tens of thousands of years in cultivation; I might not even register as a blip in the rankings. Since using magic to fight with him was no different from scratching his itch, I didn’t even bother to fight. There was also heavenly law here that would prevent him from killing me. I just wanted to draw blood for now.

I clenched my jaws and used more strength. He screamed and kicked up a fuss. For the moment, he forgot all about magic and pulled on my hair instead. The bun I knotted so prettily was now all messed up. I clung to his waist in a death grip and refused to let go.

“Are you a dog? On second thought, you’re a donkey! A jackass! Let go of me!”

“Ay eee, orh I ite yoo!” (Pay me, or I’ll bite you!) My speech came out in a mumbo jumbo. I honestly think I’m quite sweet normally. If this jerk hadn’t thrown my decades of savings down the drain I wouldn’t have fought with him so adamantly.

After wrestling with him for a while, saliva began to drip outside of my control and soon mixed with his blood, soaking his red garment into a wet patch at the shoulder. Thinking it was kind of rude, I stopped biting to swallow my drool back. “Sorry, I didn’t mean to drool on you. This spot is dirty, I’ll bite somewhere else.” I immediately switched to a different place to bite and continued to relentlessly demand: “Ay ee, orh I ite yoo!”

The boy froze for a moment. Since I was latching onto him, I could feel his chest heaving up and down as he shook with anger. “You’re going to bite me then tell me I’m dirty?! You’re telling me I’m dirty?!” He folded his whip into a shorter length and ‘pop’, I felt my butt go numb. Then, a tingling pain slowly spread to my flesh. I bawled, releasing him.

I was simultaneously stunned and furious: “You ruined my stuff and won’t pay, then even have the nerve to spank me?!”

He was also simultaneously stunned and furious: “You’re the one to talk. So what if I spank you? So what? So what?!” For every ‘so what’, he gave me another spank. The smarting pain traveled from my bottom to my head.

“No one had ever spanked me!” I shrieked, and then butted my head into his recklessly. Little birdies began to circle the both of us. Unable to control the spell under our feet, the cloud carpet changed back to its original form.

While he was still woozy, I grabbed his hair and shook him till he lost balance and fell to the ground. But he soon recovered and yanked my hair as he pressed me to the ground with him.

We rolled as we fought, fighting from outside all the way inside, pulling each other’s hair, pinching each other’s nose, yanking each other’s ears. Not using any spells, we stubbornly resorted to our fists to solve our problem, beating each other to a bloody pulp.

I don't know for how long we were entangled, or how many bookshelves we knocked down before we finally attracted Yue Lao's attention who was buzzed in the backyard.

"Holy Mother of Chang'e!" <sup>[4]</sup> Yue Lao wailed: "The red strands! The red strands are all tangled!"

---

### Notes

1. Yue Lao – old man under the moon aka the matchmaker god who ties couples who are meant-to-be with red silk strings.
2. Her name means 'lucky baby girl', but the format used is similar to how a eunuch would typically be named, starting with Xiao (little) and ending with Zi (child).
3. of the Weaver Girl and Cowherd fame.
4. Chang'e – goddess of the Moon

# Chapter 1

---

I still remember that before the fight I said to the bastard: "I'll make your life become like dark clouds."

Thinking back, what I said was too one sided.

When we both, full of bruises, were kneeling before the Jade Emperor, after hearing what we did to the red strings, he thought for a while and said: "和为贵 (he wei gui meaning he wants peace). You two did something wrong, so it's right to be punished. You two ruined the future of lovers. I'm punishing you with seven lifetimes of loving each other ( love fate). This can also help you two clear your resentment"

"Wait," the young man beside me risked his life and interrupted the Jade Emperor.

"You mean me and ...her? This fierce...fierce woman who looks like a man, you want me to have seven life times of love fate with her?"

His voice has changed; maybe he was scared out of his wits.

I was also scared out of my wits; I could only look at the Jade Emperor in horror...

The Jade Emperor nodded in confirmation.

I felt my body turned limp. All my hope is gone. I realized that for some time from now on, not only will I become the young man's dark cloud but he also will become mine. When we come together it's like thunderclouds.

"Xiao Xiang Zi, you're still Yue Lao subordinate but in these seven life times you can't contact him."

The Jade emperor thought for a while and asked: "：Tou Ta Li, are you there?"

A rough man holding an urn yelled: "I'm here."

The Jade Emperor stroked his long beard and said: "This matter will



be handed to you.”

“Yes.”

He answered full of energy made my heart beat faster. I took a deep breath, raised my head and looked at the Heaven Emperor Li. The life in heaven made him fat.

Sensing I’m looking at him, he turned around. His face was full of radiance and his cheeks turned upwards when he laughed. Uncle laughed so beautiful.

I felt my mouth tightened, my always healthy heart beat like crazy. I took a deep breath. The always healthy me feel like I’m about to die at the moment.

The Jade Emperor nodded in satisfaction: “Xiao Xian Zi, do you still have anything left to say?”

I wanted to say that it was Yue Lao who messed up the red strings while he was drunk. If the red strings are messed up, let them than be messed up. There’s no need to punish me with such a vicious trick!

I looked at Yue Lao, he looked at me pitifully as in pleading me to not expose him. I turned around and kept taking deep breaths.

“Can I curse?”

“No.”

“Then...I have nothing to say.”

The Jade emperor nodded in satisfaction and turned to the young man: “Celestial star Chu Kong, do you have anything left to say?”

Chu Kong...So the young man is 卯日星君府 (mao ri xing jun fu, I have no idea what it is. Google translate said May God, but on hamster’s blog it was celestial star. I’ll keep hamster’s translation).

Among the twelve celestial stars he’s the oldest. He’s in care of the first month of the year. I finally know the identity of the young man, who will spend seven lifetimes with me.

I looked at the ceiling and thought that this world is really ironic.

The young man beside me stayed silent for a long time, until my curious eyes fell on his face, he said with a straight pale face: "This time, messing up the red strings in Yue Lao's house, is our fault, but I swear to the God of the Day (日星君 Ri Xing jun), this woman messed up more red strings than I. So can you let this woman suffer a little more every life time?"

I stood up and want to pick a fight with him again. Heaven Emperor Li came to my side and pressed me down. He said calmly: "I will look at this matter fairly."

Although the figure of Emperor Li has gotten out of shape, his temper is still the same. I nodded gratefully and felt that in this world there's still love.

When the sentence is over, everyone went back to their homes. All across the temple I heard Emperor Li's laugh: "I love to see the little wife chasing the husband, hahahaha!"

I stood there and slowly turned into a lonely shadow. Yue Lao brought me to the underworld, patted my shoulder and sighed: "Xiao Xiang..."

I glared at him and he didn't dare to say the word he was about to say.

He sighed again: "No one will look after the temple now that you're gone. What do I do?"

I pouted and said: "Drink less as to help me accumulate more virtue."

Yue Lao lonely pinched his beard. I didn't have the heart to be mean to him. Even though he's always stingy, a bit confused and didn't go by the books, he didn't treat me bad. Unlike other fairies, whom treats their own kind with beatings and harsh words.

I comforted him: "One day in Heaven is on year in the mortal realm, seven lifetimes will take at most a year. I'll be back soon."

Yue Lao shook his head and went back with a hunched back.

Looking at his back, completely disappearing from the underworld, I

turned around and looked at the tall gate.

幽冥地府(you ming di fu, Nether World) this four words on the gate, appeared to be gloomy.

I removed the wine pot from my waist. I looked up at the wine spirits and walked to the gate.

I thought: There's nothing to be afraid of. Just think of it as coming out to see the world.

There are more spirits each passing day wondering how to form a well behaved row in front of the bridge. Six little spirits are giving those rows a bowl of soup. The old Madam Meng was sitting by the side, dozing off.

I randomly chose a row and entered the Nether Hell. It was almost my turn to drink Madam Meng's soup, but I still didn't see that bastard Chu Kong.

While I was wondering if he already has reincarnated, a golden light flashed in the dark Nether World, making all the spirits dazzled.

I looked back, the one in red full of virtue, isn't that the bastard? By his side was also a young girl in pink.

Chu Kong, who while fighting with me was so fierce, is now looking gently at the girl in pink. In the stillness of the Nether World, beside the flow of the river, you can clearly hear him say: "Ying Shi, don't worry. I'll be back soon. We're both man, so Emperor Li will not let me suffer any loss."

"Be it that way, but Chu Kong Ge Ge (what girl calls boys older than her), you need to pay attention to your safety. I heard that Yue Lao's temple Xiao Xian Zi has a weird temper. You...you and her together, you need to be wary of her."

I looked up at Heaven and thought about what I've done to let this little white flower describe me in that way.

The little spirit coughed two times to remind me to take my soup. I was embarrassed, laughed and took the soup. I was about to drink it when I heard Chu Kong say: "Don't worry. Even though her temper is strange, but her power and martial arts are below me. She can't

do anything to me.”

I narrowed my eyes and looked at the man who looked like a dog.

Chu Kong said: “Wait and see how I will handle that eunuch Xiao Xian Zi for seven lifetimes...”

The word eunuch let me shook in anger. The bowl of Madam Meng’s soup shook together with me.

Chu Kong said: “Then I’ll go count the stars at the Morningstar’s Hall with you.”

“Count your ass...,” I roared. In front of the little spirit I threw Madam Meng’s soup at the bastard.

The soup splashed in the sky and the empty bowl landed on Chu Kong’s face. He groaned, covered his face and yelled. The eyes that I remembered from our previous encounter are finally made purple by me.

I said: “Standing there with those panda eyes, yelling rubbish. Don’t you feel pain?”

Chu Kong felt the pain a little later. He looked up with eyes full of rage.

Pink dressed Ying Shi beside him kept mumbling about how her heart hurts seeing him hurt. From her pained expression, it feels like I hit her instead.

I sneered. Chu Kong clutched his teeth and looked at me. I saw a spell forming in his hands. Looks like he wants to give me a death blow. My calm heart suddenly race. After all in term of spells, mine is below Chu Kong’s.

At the proper time the little spirit said: “You...You smashed the soup! You want to rebel?!”

His loud voice woke Madam Meng up. When Madam Meng moved, the atmosphere in Nether world turned gloomier. The me who am only a cloud, suddenly felt my legs went weak, trembled and pointed at Chu Kong: “It was him! He wanted to rebel. That bastard didn’t

want to drink the soup. He wanted to see what will happen if I don't drink the soup. I'm forced to do this!"

"Ah?" a deep and husky voiced echoed through the Nether World, making it hard for people to breathe.

"Who doesn't want to drink the soup that I made?"

Madam Meng stood up. She's twenty feet tall, casting a shadow in the Nether World.

She saw the broken bowl in front of Chu Kong and yelled:" Who dare to not drink the soup? This old lady (meaning herself) boiled the soup all day. You bastards dare to waste all my efforts?!"

While saying that, a huge body flow fast above the spirit, so fast that it was inconsistent with her weight, she landed before Chu Kong. Everyone was scared. Even Chu Kong was pale faced.

I looked around and saw that nobody was paying attention to me. I ran and crossed the bridge of reincarnation.

Before going into reincarnation, I looked back. I only saw the spirits running around and yelling. Madam Meng scolding Chu Kong. Chu Kong was looking at me. Eyes full of hatred, wanting to cut me in thousands pieces.

I paused for a moment and felt that I went a bit overboard...

Before jumping in the circle of reincarnation, I gave him a thumbs-up. Madam Meng was pinching him making him look more embarrassed. I smacked my butt and went happily into the circle of reincarnation.

Chu Kong will not get pass before he drinks the soup of oblivion. This life time I'll be born first and I have my memory from my previous life. I'm stronger than him. In other words... Little bastard, you wait and see how you'll die.



## Chapter 2

---

“Miss! My Young Miss!”

The girl’s loud and frightening voice from far away, slowly reached my ears. I saw the sunlight from the gap of my eyelids, yawned and rolled over. I feel that these days are more relaxing than the days when I was a cloud. Every day I regard sunning as my job and sleeping as my purpose. There’s no worries, no stingy Yue Lao, no hardship of saving money to buy a fan, no red dressed young man’s unlucky, vicious face...

Red dressed young man...

I opened my eyes. Just thinking about that person, will get me in a bad mood. I couldn’t sleep anymore.

I sat up and heard the girl’s screaming voice, making my eardrums hurt.

“Young Miss! Don’t move, Cui Bi will save you! No, Cui Bi will call someone to save you!”

Under the tree, my personal maid was looking for a passerby. I said without care: “I can come down by myself.”

I’m still not used to hearing my childish voice. I rubbed my throat and said in a husky voice: “You, get out of my way. I’m jumping off.”

Cui Bi’s pale face turned green.

“Young Young Young...Miss, don’t don’t don’t scare me! Don’t bully Cui Bi just because I’m timid!”

I ignored her, grabbed a branch and climbed down.

In a blink of eye, I was reincarnated as the now five year old daughter of the prime minister. This five year old is spoiled by everyone, doesn’t need to do the laundry, clean or cook. Even when climbing a tree, there’s a maid under the tree, trying to protect her.

I'm puzzled as to how Li Emperor will arrange his favorite play "the wife chasing the husband".

Moreover my so called husband is probably still being punished in the Nether World. I secretly laughed in my heart.

Thinking about the day of the reincarnation, remembering Chu Kong's resentful eyes, my mood instantly soared. Revenge is bliss.

When the ground is near I jumped off and asked Cui Bi, who was full of cold sweat: "What's the matter?"

It took Cui Bi a while before she's calm again.

"Xiang Ye (the prime minister) let this servant come search for you. He said to take young miss to the General's mansion."

"Oh."

I gave an answer without much emotion and rubbed my dirty hands on Cui Bi's skirt. Cui Bi gritted her teeth but didn't say anything.

"Go tell my father that he can go first. I know the General's mansion, I can find it myself."

The emperor, my father and the general were friends since young. Especially the relationship between my father Song Qin Wen and General Lu Lian, is really good.

The two mansions are opposite each other. The two adults will go to court together. After the official duties, they'll come home together. When the two families have nothing to do, they'll visit each other. I know the general's mansion as good as my own home. There's no need for somebody to bring me there.

After hearing what I said Cui Bi helplessly frowned: "But today Xiang Ye said that I need to go with you..."

Those politically involved old men always have some business.

I pouted, cleaned my hands on Cui Bi's skirt again and helplessly said: "Alright, alright, I'll go now."

I rushed into the living room. My father was sitting on the chair, he

took a look at me and sighed helplessly: "I give up, might as well let her be a little wild."

I tugged at my clothes and didn't feel that there was something wrong with it. Comparing to my clothes from Yue Lao temple, this clothes have so many rules. What isn't he happy about?

While walking to the General's mansion he talked about the past. While I was in my mother's belly, the General's wife was also pregnant. The two families agreed that if we're the same sex, we'll become sisters. If we're the opposite sex, we'll be husband and wife. But no one ever thought that the General's wife will fall and have a miscarriage. She hasn't been pregnant since then.

I interrupted my father's affectionately story telling.

"This isn't right. A few days ago I saw the General's wife. Her belly was really big."

After saying those words, I got an auspicious feeling.

Father Song looked at me affectionately and nodded: "Yes, it's today. The General's wife gave birth to a son. Yun Xiang, now you can see what your future husband will look like."

I looked up and saw the smiling face of my father, my tears nearly fell out. I asked him: "Have you ever seen a mud horse?"

Song father was stunned.

I lowered my head, cupped my heart and whispered: "Do you know the emotion when ten thousand of mud horse passed by? No ... you don't understand."

I wiped my tears and looked defeated at my father: "Let's go take a look."

When we walked into the General's mansion every servant bowed and greeted us. Their happy voice overshadowed my gloomy words: "The bastard who came late."

The news about the General getting a son travelled fast. My father and I didn't sit long in the living room, before many officials came

with gifts for the General's son.

While father was busy greeting his colleagues, I sneaked to the backyard. Everyone in the General's mansion knows me, so no one stopped me. I used the image of an innocent lost child to go to the General's wife's chambers. Outside the door I heard the General's wife weak laugh.

"A Liang, our son looks like you."

The General's rough voice turned soft like the sound of waters. I almost couldn't hear what he said:" No, our son looks like you."

I didn't let the guards announce my presence and entered the chamber. I hid behind the door and stuck my head out. Beside the General's wife there's a tightly wrapped meatball, revealing only his face.

From my angle I can only see the nose and eyes. I deeply felt that the General and his wife were wrong. He obviously looks like a bun or better a dumpling. How can they know whom he looks like?

Seeming to sense my presence the General turned around, looked at me once, smiled, pinched the little bun's face and said: "Kid, your blessing isn't light. You haven't even opened your eyes yet and your wife, hiding behind the door, is already waiting for you. Why don't you wake up and take a look?"

After hearing those words I was embarrassed and couldn't hide anymore. So I went out very naturally and said:"Greetings general, greetings General's wife."

"小丫头 (Xiao Ya Tao, little girl <sup>[1]</sup>), you're already here, so your father and the others must be waiting. Wife, you take a good rest, I'll go greet our guests."

Lady nodded weakly. The General passed by me and rubbed my head bluntly.

"丫头, go take a look at my son, your husband."

After saying that he went out.

I ran to the bed, bend over on the edge of the bed and took a look at this lifetime's Chu Kong. He's very ugly. I looked up at the General's wife. I didn't dare to beat him openly so I asked sweetly: "Lady, can I touch him?"

"Of course."

I stretched out my finger and poked him. Surprisingly it feels so soft. It's hard to imagine that the red dressed, vicious devil, who beat my butt, has the same soul as this little one here.

I was a little surprised. So this is the new life, all from the past life has come to the present. It lets people in awe.

Seeing the little bastard tight fists, I curiously poked his fist. I didn't know that he'll open his fist and softly grabbed my finger in a tight grip. Then he put my finger in his mouth.

I was stunned and dumbfounded. It feels like my heart was also touched by his soft hands. A warm feeling crept in my heart. This little thing is really mystical.

"Yun Xiang, he likes you."

The General's wife gently touched his face and asked me gently: "Do you also like him?"

My heart shook a little. I felt like that if I say "I love to bully him" at times like this, I'll get struck by lightning. So I nodded: "Yes."

A soft finger grabbed my finger and put it in his mouth. He began to gently suck on it. I feel like I'm not myself because I relaxed myself on the couch beside the bed.

I was bewitched and said: "Really like..."

This gently touch is more addictive than the warm wind from weaver's girl fan.

"This is really good. From today on, you two can go hand in hand and grow old together."

She continued slowly: "Although you're a few years older than him,



it's no big deal. Now you protect him. In the future he can protect you..."

This gentle voice floated past my ears. The word "husband" brought me back to reality.

I remembered Emperor Li's crazy laugh when he walked out of the temple. I couldn't help but shudder and shook my head. I clearly see the future play about the wife chasing the husband getting nearer. And I at this time have let the enemy's appearance bewitch me!

What a failure, how shameful...

That day I didn't know how I went back home. I only know that my father touched my head at dinner and said:" Yun Xiang, in the future you need to get along with Hai Kong."

His face was like he has already has gotten me married.

I asked him terrified: "What is Hai Kong?"

"Your uncle Lu's son. You saw him today, do you like him?"

I absently nodded: "Like. Uncle Lu gave him a good name. It has a battle feeling to it. He's really the first general I look upon."

Isn't that right? Lu Hai Kong. It has such a domineering feeling to it.

---

## Notes

1. 小丫头. The literally meaning is little girl. It's a form of endearment.

# Chapter 3

---

The wheel of fate began to turn that day. Last night I dreamed about Emperor Li excitedly writing at his desk with a brush. I felt like a meat hanged on a bamboo stick, where people applied soy sauce on with a brush.....

I pulled the quilt over my face to let those ugly images disappear. When I felt like I was out of breath, I lifted the quilt and sat up.

No! I can't surrender to fate. This is a waste of the evil me. This is a waste of my memories my previous life in immortal realm. I need to fight against fate.

I bit my finger, pulled a long face and thought about the future. Is there a way to get rid of that Chu Kong bastard?

Suddenly, a light flashed in my mind. The play that Emperor Li is writing is seven lifetimes of love. If in any of those lifetimes one of us died early and reincarnated early while the other person waits for his demise..... If that is the case, we don't have to avoid each other; we'll naturally miss each other in every lifetime.

When I figured this out I ran to the mirror and gave the me in the mirror a kiss.

The identity as the daughter of the prime minister gives me a justified reason to be lazy. I don't want to give up on this kind of life. Then...

I looked at the me in the mirror and laughed: "Dear Lu Hai Kong, for our happiness in the next six lifetimes, can you go die, ah?"

After days of detailed planning, I excitedly ran to the General's mansion. Now that there's no one, it's a good opportunity.

Lu Hai Kong lay calmly in the cradle. Compared to a few days ago, he's more beautiful now. Soft white skin, long thick lashes. I couldn't help myself from poking his pouting lips. He woke up from my poking. He looked at me with those big watery eyes. My heart quivered and I stood there shocked.

“Ah!”

He yelled and with his small hand full of saliva, he pulled at my braid.

“Ah!”

He pulled so hard that my scalp hurts. It made me think of the red dressed, hateful bastard.

I kept myself calm and put my hand around the child's neck. The soft and fragile feeling made me think that I don't need to use strength; touching it a few times and it'll break. He's after all not that rough skinned young man...

I was soft-hearted again, when I looked at his innocent eyes. How can this poor thing know why I'm holding his neck? He lets my braid go and grabbed my finger instead. Like last time he brought my finger to his mouth. Sucking on it like it's the happiest thing in the world.

He kicked to show his excitement.

I also wanted to kick. Little brat, don't be so sweet ah! With you like this, how can this big sister bear to kill you, ah?

I was fighting the inter-turmoil in me when the wet nurse and a group of people came in.

“Oh, why is the daughter of the prime minister here?”

“I...”

I coughed to calm myself.

“I came to look at my little husband.”

Everyone laughed. Suddenly the wet nurse caught me off guard: “We're going to bath the little young master now. Miss Song, do you also want to stay?”

“No. I'll...”

I took my hand back and Lu Hai Kong began to cry. I looked at him. After a while he cried harder. Tears were streaming down. He

looked so miserable that I couldn't help but look in horror.

I was scared out of my wits. In Heaven I haven't seen anyone cry so miserably. Subconsciously I put my finger back in his mouth. The moment my finger was in his mouth, he quieted down. Laying there with a happy face.

The wet nurse smiled and said: "This is good. Now the young master can't be without Miss Song."

I looked at these foolish humans.

Next, I was forced to see the naked Lu Hai Kong bathing. I didn't get any dirty thoughts. It rather looks like aunt washing pigskin. No matter what, I wasted an opportunity to kill Lu Hai Kong, just because of my soft heart.

Every day from then on, I went to the General's mansion. I saw Lu Hai Kong every day but the wet nurse and the servants are always by his side. They didn't even give me a chance.

I was wondering if I should let the child grow a little. Then I can go play with him alone and get rid of him.

This wait took five years. Every time I looked at Lu Hai Kong, my eyes will shine with a hidden meaning. Seeing me looking like that the General and the General's wife will joke: "Has this child been poisoned with Hai Kong's poison? She's always here. No need to rush. You've gotten a life time with each other."

A life time is too long. I only want to seize a day and get rid of him. Then I'll be at ease.

When I was ten years old, I was really wild.

Father Song gave up on me completely. He doesn't care about what I do anymore. It has its advantages. I even got the name 混天魔王 (hun tian mo wang, the ruckus devil) in the capital.

On Lu Hai Kong's fifth birthday, I finally found a method to fool the wet nurse and the servants. I sneaked out the General's mansion with Lu Hai Kong. I realized that there isn't many opportunity in the General's mansion. But there are many opportunities outside. Like

the edge of a slippery river, a fall from a tree. I can create and opportunities everywhere. I rubbed my hands in excitement. Lu Hai Kong was following me closely.

“Yun Xiang, let’s go back. Father said that there are many people outside. It’s unsafe.”

From young, this little child has been taught to follow the rules. When he goes out, there’s always a bunch of people with him. He’s never been outside alone. Seeing all those people at the market, he tensed.

I was plotting where I can cause him to have an “accident”, when he pulled my sleeves: “Yun Xiang, let’s go back.”

“Shut up.”

He obediently closed his mouth and uneasily looked around.

“Yun Xiang.”

He called me pitifully and stuck his hand out. I subconsciously hold his hand.

Suddenly I remembered what I’ve gotten to do.

“Brat, do you want to go to Tan Zhe temple?”

The temple is on a mountain. On the road to the temple there’s not many people. The road is small, narrow and slippery. It’s most suited for a child to climb and fall.

He thought for a moment and said: “It’s too far, it’s unsafe.”

“Nothing to worry about. We’ll be back soon.”

He stubbornly shook his head. I sighed: “Since today is your birthday I wanted to get a talisman for you. I heard that the talismans at Tan Zhe temple are really effective.”

I let go of his hand. A face full of disappointment: “It’s alright if you don’t want to go.”

“Yun Xiang...”



He hesitated for a moment, grabbed my hand and said: "We'll go."

My disappointed face turned into a happy face. I dragged him with and said:

"Alright, let's go."

Chu Kong, ah, Chu Kong, don't blame me for being heartless. This is the best for us.

Don't ask me why I don't go die instead. Suicide is a heartless thing. I'm a soft-hearted person.....

To go to the temple, we need to past the center of the capital. Lu Hai Kong has never been here before. He found everything interesting.

"Yun Xiang, what's that?"

I looked at where he's pointing.

"Tanghulu ( candied fruit). It's hard and sweet. It isn't tasty."

Lu Hai Kong's eyes shined brightly: "It's for eating..."

I felt that this can be Lu Hai Kong's last meal. In these circumstances I shouldn't be saving the penny to buy Tanghulu. So I generously took out my hard saved money from my purse. Amongst a pile of coins, I found a penny. I went to the man, who was selling Tanghulu.

In the past, having so much money is impossible for me. Now I'm someone who can buy Tanghulu whenever I wanted. How ironic is life.....

While I was thinking, a man bumped into me. I fell onto the ground. Lu Hai Kong panicked and holds my back: "Yun Xiang, does it hurt? Does it hurt?"

I shook my head and realized that my purse is gone.

I remembered the days in Heaven, where I bitterly need to save money. A "weng" sounded in my head. That's my hard saved money! Want to steal it and steal it. That's more detestable than the Chu

Kong, who broke my fan.

“You...!” (*She was actually swearing here*)

I stood up, rolled up my sleeve and yelled: “Stealing money, I hope that you get constipation for life! Thief, don’t run!”

After I yelled, I chased after the thief. I didn’t care if Lu Hai Kong, who has shorter legs, can’t keep up with me.

The thief didn’t expect that a ten year old girl will dare to chase him. He has a guilty conscience and sped up his pace. There were many people on the market. The thief couldn’t get pass them so fast. I, with this small body, caught up with him. After going through reincarnation my power are gone. But I still have my fist. I can’t go against someone with martial arts, but against a thief, my fist is enough.

The thief is a middle aged man. His body is bigger than mine. A quick beating will certainly not do. So when I was chasing him, I snatched a rolling pin from one of the bread sellers. I took two steps back, looked down. I heard “dang”. The thief moaned “ying” and was on the ground, hands on his crotch.

I threw away the rolling pin and from his pocket, I got my purse back.

“Hmpf, you dare to steal my money? Have you prepared to die?”

I counted the money and found that there isn’t a penny missing. With a contented smile I said: “Lu Hai Kong, let’s go buy Tanghulu.”

I didn’t get a reply. I closed my left eye and saw that I was surrounded by strangers.

“Huh?”

I was dumbfounded. Lu Hai Kong, where are you?

## Chapter 4

---

Compared to losing Lu Hai Kong, what I had planned should be scarier. However, after losing Lu Hai Kong, I felt an inexplicable deep fear. With fear comes imagination. If Lu Hai Kong has been murdered, then it's alright. But what if he is sold to do hard work, become a servant or be sold to a brothel. Those images made my head hurts.

If that were the case, even if Chu Kong went to hell, even if he'll face the danger of ceasing to exist, he'll let me disappear in one of the three realms (human, hell, heaven). I can't go too overboard.

While walking I shouted his name. I've never been so excited to see him appear well before me. I searched the whole day without results.

When the sun disappeared, the gates on the north, south, west and east of the capital closed. If someone has kidnapped Lu Hai Kong, he'll be outside the capital by now.

With only my power, I wouldn't find Lu Hai Kong. Lu Hai Kong is the general's son. The general, in order to search for his son can use some of his power. With that thought, I ran back home.

When the red lights at the general's mansion were lit, the two guards stood more rigid. I was about to rush past them, when I saw father Song with an apologetic face, coming out together with the general.

Father Song said: "It's my fault for not teaching her well, letting her have the gut to cause today's mess. Brother Lu, when I find that brat, I'll bring her here to apologize."

My heart made a "thump" sound. Did something really happen to Lu Hai Kong?

I didn't care about how father Song will punish me and ran towards them.

“Father, general; Lu Hai Kong what... what happened to him?”

The general didn't even get to speak; I was interrupted by my angry father: “What happened?! You still have the gall to ask what happened?! I haven't taught you well and spoiled you too much. You don't even know the limits of your actions anymore. Today, I'll let you catch up some lessons!”

Father Song dragged me to our home. Even before entering he yelled: “Lao Zhao, bring me the stick<sup>[1]</sup>.”

Father Song has never used the stick against me. I was afraid to be beaten, but I still asked: “Has someone really sold Lu Hai Kong? How come he's sold at such a short time? How was he sold? How much did he cost?”

Father Song quivered in anger: “I'd like to sell you too.”

“Brother Song, “the general interjected. “Yun Xiang is still small. That she doesn't understand things is normal. My brat was also not in a big trouble. Just let this matter slide.”

I did not let father Song answer: “Lu Hai Kong wasn't in a big trouble? Then in what for small trouble did he get into?”

General Lu helplessly sighed: “He...he was caught by bad guys. Luckily, our guards arrived in time. He lost half a tooth and was a bit scared. But Yun Xiang, you really shouldn't have taken Hai Kong outside the general's mansion alone.”

Hearing that Lu Hai Kong was fine, I felt relieved. I didn't bother with what the general said after that and turned to father Song: “Father, see, nothing happened. His virginity is still there, his life is still there.”

Pale faced father Song was turned to the general, while the general was persuading my father. Upon hearing my words, he stopped and said instead: “Ten year is not small anymore. There isn't many years left before she'll get the hairpin<sup>[2]</sup> Brother Song, strengthening your way of disciplining is understandable. I'll go back now.”

Suddenly I realized that I may have said something wrong. I wanted to amend what I've said, but father Song grabbed my hand and

dragged me. I staggered.

He sternly said: "Come here!"

Thinking about the thick stick hanging at the ancestral hall<sup>[3]</sup>, my legs started to feel the pain. Without a God's body, being beaten is a vexed thing. My lip trembles and my eyes began to fill with tears.

"Father, I was wrong."

Father Song was unmoved: "I've been spoiling you too much. That's why you've become as you're now. Even if you cry blood tears, today you'll receive this beating."

"Father!"

My tears kept falling down. I looked like when Lu Hai Kong cried when he was still an infant.

I knelt down and hugged his thigh. With a hoarse voice while crying, I said: "I really know I'm wrong! I'll never go alone with Lu Hai Kong again! In the future, I'll obediently listen to you! I'll obediently stay at home every day, reading books and doing embroidery."

"Heng," father Song sneered. "You've already used this way."

His face darkened and he said in a heavy voice: "Don't cry anymore on the street. People will look at us as a joke."

He spoke in such a tone, he must be really angry.

I know that no matter what I say, I can't escape today's beating. Just when I was wiping my tears and was about to stand up, someone shoved the general's mansion's door open. A small person, who didn't even wear a coat, with one red eye, stood at the general's doorway.

His head was bandaged. It must've been from today's injuries. Lu Hai Kong, seeing me on the ground, grabbing onto father Song's thigh, was shocked for a moment. After all, in front of him I've always been haughty and aloof. I let go of father Song's thigh and just knelt on the ground. In my heart, I was wondering why Lu Hai Kong was here. I saw Lu Hai Kong's lips trembled and tears

streamed down. I don't understand him. The nanny and servants behind him were busy comforting him.

Lu Hai Kong has a stubborn temper. He pushed them away. With tottering steps, while wiping away his tears, he ran towards me.

"Yun Xiang....huwa...huhu."

He wiped his tears with one hand; with the other he grabbed my hair.

"You don't want me anymore! You don't want me anymore! No matter how hard I chased I couldn't keep up with you!"

My mouth twitched. I came up with a reason to stall time: "I chased after him to buy Tanghulu for you..."

Lu Hai Kong stopped crying for a moment. He stared for a while with his bright, big eyes. Then tears started to stream out again.

"Huhu... It's all my fault. It's because I wanted to eat Tanghulu. Now Yun Xiang has to be beaten... It's all Hai Kong's fault. Letting Yun Xiang be bullied, it's all because Hai Kong was not good. I can't even protect Yun Xiang. Hai Kong is stupid. Even causing trouble for Yun Xiang."

He walked slowly towards me and hugged my neck, making my neck all sticky. He's crying like the one who will be beaten, is him.

I was a bit startled. I let his tears soak into my shoulders. Some also slid against my skin. It feels a little cool and a little warm. I don't understand why in the human world, when he soiled my clothes, I can't seem to get mad.

"Don't cry anymore."

I patted his head. It turned out that after drinking the soup of oblivion and crossing that bridge, has this meaning. Regardless whom he was in the past life man or God; no matter what love or hatred exist between us, after being reincarnated everything has a new beginning. You don't know me, I don't know you. For humans, fate last only a lifetime...

Lu Hai Kong held onto me, crying for quite a while. Father Song

couldn't stand it anymore: "Alright, alright! I won't beat you anymore. Tonight, you need to kneel in front of the ancestral hall and reflect on what you've done."

Lu Hai Kong slept with me in the ancestral hall. I slept against a pillar, he slept on my lap.

The next day when I woke up, Lu Hai Kong blinked and pulled at his sleeve. He said: "Yun Xiang, look, you drooled very much while sleeping. I wiped them for you."

I raised my eyebrows, knocked his forehead: "Don't say things that embarrass me."

He nodded, sat up and said: "'I won't be disgusted<sup>[4]</sup>."

I twitched my lips. You won't mind now, because you're still young. Wait till you get your memory back. Then I don't know how you'll look (in a bad way) at me.

Lu Hai Kong held onto my neck and smiled: "When I grow up, Yun Xiang won't be punished anymore. No matter what you do, you won't be punished. I'll protect you."

"How much skill do you have? Don't learn those lying words from playboys."

Lu Hai Kong didn't say anything and kept holding me. This quiet moment in the sun, made me want to hug him and fiercely kiss him.

From that day on, the people from the general's mansion felt that little young master played less, woke up early, treat his homework more seriously than before and he uses more strength to learn martial arts.

Did he find out that I'm up to no good<sup>[5]</sup> and is beginning to guard against me? Or... is he really determined to protect me? This is a joke! I used so much energy, trying to kill this little guy and he still wants to protect me? When Chu Kong heard this, he'll die from laughing.

Anyway, in the future, for a very long time; the one I saw every day

after I woke up, will be this brat drenched in sweat. He laid on the edge of my bed and excitedly told me how early he woke up, how long he practiced martial arts and how many poems he has memorized.

Listening to him, telling me every day about what he did that morning, I was distraught. If...if it goes on like this, how can I still fight with you, little bastard?

Those days had lasted till Lu Hai Kong was ten, I was fifteen. Xiang Fu Miss, Song Yun Xiang, finally got the hairpin.

In that year on a summer day in July, all of sudden father Song with a stern face, prohibited me from being alone with Lu Hai Kong. I know that it is because of father Song's Confucianism thoughts. I ignored him. But in the next month, I really didn't see Lu Hai Kong.

On the Mid-Autumn Festival, the moon was in a perfect circle, a weird smell came to the prime minister's mansion. I turned my head and saw that there was a wave of smoke rising from the general's mansion. After a while, fire was burning, overshadowing the moon's bright light.

I blinked, thinking about that these days stern father Song and the missing Lu Hai Kong, I suddenly understood. Something happened in court.

I wiped my mouth, which was covered in Mooncake and stood up. Father Song asked: "Where are you going?"

"To my chamber. I'm done eating."

Father Song wrinkled his brow and ordered the guard: "Guard the Miss. Tonight she isn't allowed to go anywhere."

I went back to my room. There's such a big fire next to us, father Song didn't even go to take a look. It must be the order of someone higher up. Otherwise, who'll dare to do this at the general's mansion? Lu Hai Kong is doomed this time. Ten years, he finally went to reincarnate and broke our seven lifetimes of love.

While walking to my room, we passed the ancestral hall. I suddenly



thought of that day when Lu Hai Kong was in my arms, looking at me with bright eyes full of hope. He said I drooled on his sleeves. So much that it soaked his sleeves. Hmpf, who'll drool so much?

I couldn't take one step further. Let...let me just help him collect his corpse. After all, we've been fighting for so many years.

---

## Notes

1. 家法 (jiā fǎ, home discipline): father Song literally said bring out the home discipline. When someone did something wrong, they'll be punished according to the rules of their homes. If they did really wrong, they'll most likely be beaten with the stick.
2. Getting the hairpin: in ancient China a girl, a woman and a wife have different hairstyles. When a girl goes from a little girl to adulthood, she'll get a hairpin. Her hairstyle changes to a less girly hairstyle. Most likely one with a bun.
3. Ancestral Hall is a place where someone can show their filial piety. A common central feature of the ancestral temples are the ancestral tablets, that embody the ancestral spirits. The ancestral tablets are typically arranged by seniority of the ancestors. Altars and other ritual objects such as incense burners are also common fixtures. Ancestors and gods can also be represented by statues
4. 我不嫌弃云祥的 ( wǒ bù xiánqì Yún Xiáng de): what he meant was that he won't mind what Yun Xiang is like. He'll still like her. (that sweet pie, really want to hug him XD)
5. 图谋不轨(Tú móu bù guǐ) meaning she has a hidden agenda.

# Chapter 5

---

Avoiding the guards' eyes, I climbed the backyard wall. After going through a big circle, I was finally at the general's backdoor. The general's mansion was ablaze. Beside the sound of the fire, it was deep silence.

I stared at the backdoor for a long time. If I went in and came face to face with a killer, I wouldn't be able to collect Lu Hai Kong's body but will also give up my life. It's not worth it.

My thoughts took a turn and I remembered that at the east of the general's mansion, there's a doghole. That place is hidden. Even if there are still killers in there, they won't find me.

It's just that after all these years accepting the human ideology, I felt that crawling through a doghole, is not a glorious thing. Going again today, I don't even know if my body can still pass through the doghole.

But when I found the doghole, I discovered that there was already someone in the doghole. The one, whom I wanted to collect his corpse; Lu Hai Kong. Half of his body was outside the wall, the other half was still inside the wall. I didn't feel embarrassed and mused: "It seems that I really can get past the doghole."

However, now it's not the right time to express my feelings.

When Lu Hai Kong heard my voice, he slowly raised his head. His always clean face was blood stained. His always translucent eyes, is now like dust. A vast gray. He absent-minded stared at me. Without any emotion, like a puppet.

I knelt down. In the flickering firelight, I saw that a side of his right eye has been burned. I can't differentiate between the whites and the eyeball. All was muddy.

He's stuck in the doghole. It's such a ridiculous sight. But I couldn't find it amusing.

I stuck my hand out. But something made me hesitate to touch him.

“Lu Hai Kong.”

He didn't respond. He's only blankly staring at me. I blinked. I don't know why my heart hurts. I repressed that feeling and gently poked his forehead.

“Are you still alive?”

“Yun Xiang.”

His voice was weak.

“I'm still alive...”

It doesn't sound like an answer, but more like a question he's asking me.

The inexplicable feeling in my heart got stronger. I couldn't help myself from touching his head. Not light, not heavy I patted his head. His hair felt sticky. I guess he must've escaped from a pool of blood. Losing your family overnight is a cruel thing for a ten year old.

“I'm still alive.”

I stared at him. His black left eye slowly reflected my image and his right eye...I'm afraid that he can never use it again.

He looked at me for a moment before asking: “Did you come here to save me?”

“Originally I came to find your corpse.”

His eyes darkened and he nodded.

“But now I'm here to save you.”

I grabbed his hand and asked: “Are you tightly stuck?”

He seemed to not dare say a word, blankly staring at me. Before he could say something, I felt his body being pulled back inside. It seems like on the other side of the wall, someone is pulling at Lu Hai Kong's legs, dragging him back inside. Lu Hai Kong's eyes got

bigger looked at me. He was so scared that he couldn't speak.

I hugged him tightly, not letting go. On the other side of the wall someone said: "There's someone outside helping him."

"Let's cut his legs. So he'll never be able to escape again."

There are still two people on the other side of the wall! They actually want to slay Lu Hai Kong's legs. My heart quivered. I suddenly got an idea.

"Father! Quickly bring the Xiang Fu's<sup>[1]</sup> guards. The killer inside want to cut Lu Hai Kong's legs."

"It's Xiang Ye's<sup>[2]</sup> daughter."

"That ruckus causing devil? The two killers were quiet for some time then one said: "Withdraw!"

Victory came too sudden. I didn't think that my name will be more useful than my father's name. After suppressing a chuckle, my face darkened again... The killers are so afraid of me. What for image do I have in the commoner's hearts?

There's no time to think more. I ruthlessly pulled Lu Hai Kong. Grabbed his hand and dragged him in the direction of Xiang Fu.

"For now, you go hide at my place."

Lu Hai Kong stopped walking. In the air filled with smoke, he quietly said: "Yun Xiang, I can't go to Xiang Fu."

"Why? Are you afraid that my father won't protect you?"

Lu Hai Kong looked at the ground and didn't answer me. He's now obviously a dirty kid, but strangely, I felt that his mind is more complicated than my mind, which also has the memories of hundred years of living as a cloud spirit.

He was silent for a long time before saying: "Yun Xiang, I'm going to go outside of the capital...only outside...need to go outside."

He's spoken with such a strong voice. He must be determined. I intuitively felt that he's hiding many things. I also felt that from this

moment on, Lu Hai Kong's life will change. Moreover, I also felt that my time to choose has come. Go back to Xian Fu or go with Lu Hai Kong to the outside the capital? I looked up at the sky. Suddenly I've a strange feeling.

Emperor Li, so you've been waiting here for me! If I've drunken the soup of oblivion, this life, I would've been a normal Xiang Fu young miss. If Lu Hai Kong wasn't delayed by me for five years at the nether world, he would now be the same age as me. Two people who are engaged, falling in love with each other. Miss Xiang Fu doesn't have the heart to leave the general's young master full of hatred, will go with him to the north. She willingly abandoned her comfortable life, only following the general's young master. So the first act of the play "little wife chasing husband" is staged like this, at this bad time.

Lu Hai Kong must've thought too much after seeing my sorrowful look. He turned and began walking in the opposite direction.

"Yun Xiang, till we meet again."

Hearing a ten year old say such a deep sentence, after the trauma, my heart missed a beat. I scratched my head irritably and muttered softly: "Alright, alright. I admit defeat. I'll not change fate again. Besides I need to avoid having to receive punishment again after I go back."

But it didn't seem filial if I just go. So I picked up a burned wood and casually wrote on the wall: Father, your daughter eloped with a gentleman. Don't lose spirit and take care of your body.

After finishing writing, I didn't care if father Song will find this secluded doghole with the words above, I threw away the wood and run to catch up with Lu Hai Kong. I ran till I was in front of him. I bent a little and said: "You walk too slowly. A little later the killer will be chasing. Come up, I'll piggyback."

The person behind me didn't move. I turned around and saw him looking at me with a horrified expression. I wondered why: "Come ah."

“Yun Xiang...”

I grinned: “Young man<sup>[3]</sup>, let’s elope.”

He didn’t move, I didn’t urge. Finally he stretched his hands and hugged me: “Thank you...”

His thin body was trembling a little. At this time I couldn’t help but twitch my mouth: “Elopment is fine, embracing is fine. Brat does not take advantage of me in this situation. See where you’re putting your hands on.”

He felt embarrassed. Leisurely he put his hands on my shoulder and holds my neck. I didn’t care anymore. Walking while he was on my back. Lu Hai Kong must be tired. Hid head resting on my shoulder, he mumbled: “Yun Xiang protected me. In the future, I’ll protect Yun Xiang.”

His words reminded me of a decade ago. The general’s wife was looking at infant Lu Hai Kong, her gaze as gentle as the sunlight. She said I’m older than him. Now I’ll protect him, in the future, he’ll protect me...

I turned and looked at the general’s mansion, which was in flames. Suddenly I realized that there will be no one anymore, who’ll look at Lu Hai Kong with such a gentle gaze.

The gods have an eternal life. They don’t understand the hardship of parting, the pain of death. I used the God’s point of view; this is a normal circle yet I’m sentimental. But to mortals losing means losing.

This life or eternal life, no one can completely repeat his life, even if it’s himself.

I suddenly felt that something is strange. I’m indifferent to death, but the Lu Hai Kong who isn’t crying or causing trouble, is a bit unusual. I turned my head and glanced at the boy on my shoulder, with his eyes closed....Maybe even through his life, I still wouldn’t understand Lu Hai Kong’s pain from tonight.

The moment the gates opened, I took Lu Hai Kong outside the capital. after leaving the capital for half a day; my brain finally

realized what I didn't do right, the night before.

"Song... my father, looks like I dragged him in a hole<sup>[4]</sup>."

I scratched my head and said to Lu Hai Kong: "Last night, I was impatient to save you, putting my father in trouble. What I did isn't right."

Seeing my guilty face, Lu Hai Kong exhibits a real shocking face.

"Yun Xiang, you don't know anything. That's why you dare to say that!"

"Know what?"

Lu Hai Kong continued to be stunned. Then he shook his head. In the eye that he still has, I saw a third of helplessness, a third ridiculousness and many more things that I don't understand. He hung his head and took a bite of the bun. Vaguely he said: "Nothing, nothing will happen to Prime Minister Song."

This brat said that so assured. My heart felt lighter, although I still don't understand what happened in court.

I and Lu Hai Kong went to the north. After half a month, came the sudden news from the capital that the emperor has died. The new emperor ascended the throne. Surprisingly the new emperor is not the crown prince, but the crown prince's uncle, the previous emperor's brother, Zhi Hou Wang Ye.

Half of the ministers have been removed. The powerful ones have been removed, exiled to their hometowns or sentenced to death. The only one, who is still sitting tight in his spot, is my father, the prime minister Song Qin Wen. The first one in court who bowed to the new emperor is also my father, Song Qin Wen.

At that time I was sitting with Lu Hai Kong at the roadside stall, resting and drinking tea. Beside us there were people who looked like scholars. They keep sighing.

I don't understand their concern for the fate of their lives, but now I understand the mystery behind the fire at the general's mansion.

Lu Hai Kong silently drank tea; I silently sorted my thoughts. My father, general Lu and the old emperor were three good friends. After some years my father and the emperor's brother became even better friends. He's not so fond of the two other friends anymore.

Old emperor became sick. His brother wants to be the emperor. My father favored the emperor's younger brother. But the general supported the blood of the old emperor, Zhi Chi crown prince. That's why the general's mansion needs to be burned. That's why Lu Hai Kong wasn't even worried about my words; that I'll cause trouble for father Song, because destroying their family was planned by my father.

My appearance was a surprise to everyone. That's why the two killers left in a hurry. They weren't afraid of me. They only wanted to go back and report to my father. That's why Lu Hai Kong asked me "did you come to save me?"

So that's why Lu Hai Kong was surprised when I said that I'll bring trouble for my father. That's why we were able to smoothly be gone out of the gate. And smoothly walking all the way till now must be because my father is protecting us.

After all, I'm still his daughter. After all, he watched Lu Hai Kong grow. And after all...having to plot against an old friend, his heart will be uneasy. Intentionally letting Lu Hai Kong go, must be because my father's soft heart.

Staring at him quietly drinking tea, I went back to that night, remembering all his actions. I gave a long sigh.

Former Lu Hai Kong was too small, so he was ignorant. But now he's slowly beginning to understand things; getting smart, getting calm. After experiencing such misfortune, I'm afraid he'll understand things more deeply now.....

A thought took a turn in my head. I really want to pull out emperor Li's beard one for one. If today's scene changes it would be so miserable: Xiang Fu Miss will follow the full of hatred young master. On one side young master loves Xiang Fu Miss. The other side because of her father's action towards the general, he hates her.



Love and hate at the same time. He'll sometimes be warm and sometimes be cold towards Xiang Fu Miss. Xiang Fu Miss will lead a life of oppressive feelings. But her heart is still firmly chasing young master.

Little wife struggling to chase husband second act, without a warning, will be staged like this.

Emperor Li, you dare throw more pots of blood! In front of your home must be many dead dogs now! Where did you get such cheap and useless dog blood! How many more miserable scenes will be waiting for me on the road to the north?!

Besides...in the state I'm now and the way I and Lu Hai Kong are getting along, will we be able to meet emperor Li's particular taste?

"Yun Xiang"

Lu Hai Kong finished drinking tea and look up at me: "I'm finished resting."

I looked at the vast gray of his right eye and patted his head: "Let's go."

Worrying is useless. The future will come nevertheless. Compared to me this child must've a bigger burden. He's so brave. I can't lose to him.

---

## Notes

1. Xiang Fu: the prime minister's residence
2. Xiang Ye: the prime minister
3. 少年 (Shào nián: young man): this is what she used to call Chu Kong. She finds it amusing that she'll elope with Chu Kong.
4. If killing the general was an imperial order, she leaving with Lu Hai Kong will bring trouble to her father.

## Chapter 6

---

The night is cold, the blanket is warm.

I was woken by Lu Hai Kong's kick. Seeing the one beside me struggling, I sighed: "Here we go again."

After escaping the capital, every night Lu Hai Kong didn't sleep well. While sleeping, he'll begin kicking. I pressed his legs. Only after he's no longer struggling, will I loosen my hand.

Moonlight shone through the window into the inn. In the moonlight I saw Lu Hai Kong's forehead full of cold sweat. This little kid; at daytime he'll pretend to be strong. But the night will betray him. No matter how strong, he can't fight his nightmares.

In order to sleep for the rest of the night, I took him into my arms. Stroking his head, while saying like a lullaby into his ears: "It's alright now. It's alright now."

When I woke up the following morning, Lu Hai Kong in my arms, was already staring at me.

I yawned: "Why didn't you wake me up?"

He answered: "You didn't sleep well last night. During the day I want you to sleep a little longer."

I opened my mouth. No matter what I did the half yawn left wouldn't come out. This child is more thorough than anyone.

Going on the street to buy breakfast, I stood by a stall and said: "Give me four big buns."

"Alright, that's two pennies."

The vendor wrapped the buns and handed them to me. I took out the money. There's only one tael left and 3 pennies.

My savings! My money! All the money flow away on this road to the north. My heart hurts so much that I want to give them a few kicks.

I actually abandoned the comfortable life at Xiang Fu? I actually abandoned it like that! I really want to slap myself. Little Xiang, for what purpose did you do it, ah? Not being selfish? Scarifying for love? Is that really you? Why learn to be noble? Why be a savior? Are those things that you should do? Are they? Are they? Are they?

I was in my own world, only stepping out of it when the vendor said: "Miss, two pennies, please."

I sighed and took out two pennies, exchanging it for four buns. I looked down right into Lu Hai Kong's gaze. Seeing his right eye, I felt regret. I helplessly smiled in front of him. I'm just too good-hearted.

While walking and eating buns with Lu Hai Kong, I asked: "Brat, we're almost at the north. How much more do we have to go northward?"

Hearing my question. Lu Hai Kong was shocked again.

"Yun Xiang... you don't know anything and just came with me? I pinched the buns and answered: "En, yes ah. I'm so simple and doesn't understand things. I don't know anything, it must be hard for you. On the way here, the scenery wasn't bad. After I deliver you, I'll just leave." (she's being sarcastic here)

Lu Hai Kong is still young. Hearing me say those words, he panicked. He grabbed my hand. Tightly holding it, he stared at me. His lips trembled, but no word came out of his mouth. It looks the same as the night, when he was tightly stuck in the doghole.

I don't know what kind of role I played in Lu Hai Kong's heart at the moment, but I know that this kid's heart isn't as calm as it appeared all the way here. Just the right place, the right words will defeat his strong and calm appearance.

My angry words are too much for him.

I looked at him for a moment and touched his head with my other hand: "I was joking with you, the north is too far. I'll be afraid to go back alone."

His tight grip on my hand loosened a bit. Suppressing the panic in his

heart, he said: "I don't hold anything against Yun Xiang. I just think that Yun Xiang should know, I..."

He didn't know how to explain further. His ears drooped. With a face of surrender, he nestled against my body. Sticking his hand out, holding me tightly like holding a *driftwood*<sup>[1]</sup>.

"In the future, I'll surely go back home with Yun Xiang. Then Yun Xiang will not be afraid anymore."

Silly kid. Going from Heaven going the Nether world, then coming to the human world, I've never been afraid. Will I be afraid of that little journey? He's too easy too deceive.

I separated Lu Hai Kong from me: "After you've eaten the buns, don't rub your body on me. With your mouth full of oil, you'll make my clothes dirty. The north is cold. The clothes are expensive. Where will we get one to change, ah?"

The little hands that were holding me, slightly stiffened. He buried his face deeper in my clothes: "You will... Yun Xiang will lead a life without worries and don't need to wander anymore. It'll happen very soon."

Hearing him said those words, I became sentimental....originally I was living such life!

Three days later, we arrived in the biggest city on the frontier, Lu Liang City. This is also one of the largest military base.

After entering the city, I was about to go look for an inn, when Lu Hai Kong grabbed my hand. All the way he was asking people directions. We arrived at the mansion of the protector of this city.

I hold him tightly: "Don't tell me that you walked all the way here to surrender! Do you think you can enter one of the court's institution? You don't want to live anymore?!"

Lu Hai Kong answered me helplessly: "Yun Xiang, my uncle lives here."

So he came to seek help from his relatives. This relative of his

doesn't seem simple. The sole protector of the north, guarding all this place. The whole north-west must be in his care.

I was pleased to see that our future days are taken care off. With my head straight in the air, I walked to the door. Lu Hai Kong couldn't even pull me back. He began to dig for something in his chest. I stood in front of the door with the posture of Xiang Fu Miss and called: "Hey, ask your protector to come out."

The two guards swept their eyes over me. They stood there, ignoring me, like two statues.

I raised an eyebrow. Lu Hai Kong's uncle has some skills. He trained the two guards very well.

I was about to say some more thing when Lu Hai Kong pulled at me. He took out a green cloth. He ripped the green cloth. An instant flash of gold, made my eyes hurt. I only heard Lu Hai Kong's calm and steady voice: "The medal of general from the marshal military forces is here. Seeing medal is seeing person. I want to see your protector."

I turned to look at Lu Hai Kong. Brat, every night you sleep with your hand clutching your chest. So this was the reason! He....he didn't tell me that he was hiding something so important. Is it because he's afraid that I've become crazy after being poor? Is he afraid that I'll go pawn this gold medal?

I've to say that even at such a young age, he's good at looking through people.

The face of the guards changed colors when they saw the medal. The two exchanged a glance. One of them went inside the mansion, the other bowed: "见过<sup>[2]</sup> general. Forgive me for the neglect."

"Is the protector home?"

"We've already informed him."

I was still pondering about how much longer do we need to stand here, when I heard quick footsteps coming.

Hearing his voice, he must've been practicing. The guard that went inside came out. Behind him was a man wearing armor. He looks handsome. Sort of looking like Lu Hai Kong's father when he was young. This must be Lu Hai Kong's uncle. In his hand he was still holding a sword and he was still wearing a helmet. His sweat was mixed with dust. He looks like he was practicing and rushed out here.

Lu Hai Kong stared at the man wearing armor. His eyes were heavy, full of emotions.

I don't understand. Coming to seek refuge at the relatives, seeing them, why didn't they rush forward and gave each other a big hug?"

It was silent for a very long time. Finally uncle broke the silence: "Lu Hai Kong."

His deep voice that the men in the capital don't have, not hoarse and mature, bring a manly feeling, making my eyes and ears bright.

"Uncle."

Lu Hai Kong only said this word.

I felt my sleeves tightened. I looked down and saw Lu Hai Kong tightly grabbing my sleeves. He was so nervous that he didn't dare to move.

I thought carefully. The news about us fleeing the capital must've already reached the north. The court didn't search for us openly, but secretly they must be searching for us. Especially in this northern frontier. The court would've guessed that Lu Hai Kong will come here. Lu Hai Kong must've known his situation. But he couldn't not come, because this is the only place where he could go.

And now he's seeing his uncle, whom he's never seen. He knows nothing about the other party, but he have to put his fate in this man's hand. If uncle only says "catch them", we can only wait patiently to be sent back to the capital.

Lu Hai Kong is taking a gamble between life and death. He bet his life in the hope that he'll live. The inexplicable and uncomfortable is

there in my heart again. The decision about life and death, seeking the hope of life, he put all of his chance and courage on the table to aim for a tomorrow. I held his clenched fists. Together we silently looked at the men in front of us.

*“Heart in the sea, eyes in the sky<sup>[3]</sup>. Brother gave you a good name.”*

Uncle laughed and stepped down the stairs. With one hand he pulled Lu Hai Kong in his embrace. Uncle patted twice fiercely on Lu Hai Kong’s back.

“Good boy, you must be tired from the long journey.”

Those two pats seemed like two slaps for my heart. I was afraid that Lu Hai Kong will vomit blood after those strong pats.

I looked at thin Lu Hai Kong. His eyes were red, full of tears. But he didn’t let them fall down, gritted his teeth and said: “Not tired...It’s just that father...father and mother, they...”

Uncle touched his head: “I know.”

Lu Hai Kong closed his eyes. The tears in his eyes finally streamed down his cheeks.

This is the first time that he cried in front of someone since the incident.

At this time my heart felt a sense of loss. It’s not because he has found someone else to rely on, but it’s because I suddenly understood that after father Song set the general and his whole family in fire, Lu Hai Kong can never treat Song Yun Xiang the same again as when they were little. Never treating Son Yun Xiang as sincerely as before.

Even if there’s dependence, respect or even love, but there’s also a gap.

This child is strong, but he’s also fragile, intelligent and extremely sensitive.

---

## Notes

1. When a boat sink, people will hold onto the pieces of wood to not sink together with the boat. The woods are their life savers. Lu Hai Kong can't go without Yun Xiang.
2. 见过 (Jiànguò) : the literary meaning is "I've seen" but in this sentence, it is a form of greeting and showing respect.
3. 陆海空 (lù hǎi kōng): 海=sea 空=sky



## Chapter 7

---

That night, Lu Hai Kong and his uncle talked the whole night with his uncle. I returned to my room and carefully took a bath. After the bath I slept the most comfortable sleep that I've had in days. Later ....there's no later.

The next day, Lu Hai Kong's uncle Lu Lan arrested the official sent by court. Standing on the old emperor's side, eliminating traitors in a high profile way and he also raised the flag opposing the new emperor. Many people in the south also followed his actions.

Since then Lu Hai Kong lived wholeheartedly, awaiting the day he can take revenge. At such a young age, he lost his smile. The whole day practicing martial arts and studying. The whole day he's with his uncle.

And I, I fell in love with one of Lu Liang's city's famous liquor house. The lady selling the liquor, Lan Xiang, is a beautiful widow. The lady has a pair of magic hands. Her wine are more tasty than the ones I buy in Heaven. Of course, perhaps it's because I had little money then. That may be the reason why I couldn't buy good wine in Heaven.

I don't like the life in the mansion; the life full of tension. When I woke up, I'll go to this liquor house. Sitting there, drinking and listening to other customers. Occasionally, when I'm drunk, I'll take advantage of the boss, Yu Lian Xiang. Lan Xiang often laughed at me: "If you were a man, long ago, I would've beaten the crap out of you for being a lecher."

Then I will always sigh: "If I had known that I'll meet such a gentle lady as Lan Xiang, I would've put my whole heart to be reincarnated as a man."

If I was reincarnated as a man, Emperor Li can't be forcing me and that bastard Chu Kong to be together. I secretly wrote this trick in my mind.

When I was twenty years, Lu Hai Kong's heart still wanted to take revenge. The northern military forces are growing. I don't like to stay at the mansion even more than before. Every day I'm outside and will only return when it's dark.

Today, like usual I returned when the sun sets. But when I returned to the front door I was surprised. The front door didn't had anything special on it, but a bunch of people traveling here, reminded me that today is not a normal day. Seeing those people entering the mansion, carrying gifts, I suddenly remembered. Today is Lu Hai Kong's fifteen birthday. I looked at my empty hands, scratched head, turned around and walked in the direction of Lan Xiang liquor house. Arriving the liquor house, Lan Xiang was closing. Seeing me she asked: "How come you've come back?"

Originally I wanted to ask her to fill a bottle of wine for me to take away. But then I thought that today Lu Hai Kong wouldn't have time to chat with me. I sighed with mixed feelings: "The child I raised left with someone else. I feel that fate is always playing with me."

Lan Xiang didn't ask. she only smiled and said: "Eight out of the ten things in life are unhappy things. Do you want to come in?"

I rushed to Lian Xiang and hugged her.

"My little Xiang Xiang is still as understanding. I'll kiss you."

"Shameless! It's late now, I'll brew tea for you. You're not allowed to drink anymore."

I took advantage of the time when Lian Xiang went to boil water and stole a bottle of wine. I took a big gulp. This wine took away all my spirits. When Lan Xiang came back with tea, I was already lying on the table.

I still have my consciousness. I know that Lan Xiang is cursing at me. but my body is not in my control anymore. Suddenly , I really miss the immortal body that only has a few hundred years of cultivation. The body that never gets drunk would've been so useful now.

I don't know how long I was lying on the table. Suddenly I heard

cries of panic: “Yun Xiang!”

Using much strength I opened one eye. I saw Lu Hai Kong pushed the door of the liquor house open and walked quickly to me.

“Huh?” I was still in a trance when I forced myself to sit up.

“Brat, you came to find me, ah?”

Lu Hai Kong is now a half head taller than me. He came to me and knelt down. He ignored my question. He held my hand quiet a while before calming down. Softly he said: “I only told my uncle about today, I didn’t know those people would come. I know you don’t like places with many people. The guards inside the mansion told me you didn’t come back. The guard at the door only said you came back, but then went away. I thought you were angry...”

Although his age is small, the way he handles things is not inferior compared to his uncle. But today, only a few words of explanation; he’s saying them incoherently, making them illogical.

I chuckled and waved with my hands: “Why are you nervous? Now I can’t beat you anymore.”

Lu Hai Kong stared at me for a moment and then said with a little laugh: “Yun Xiang was never rough with me.”

Even if it was only my shadow you wouldn’t have remembered at that time. I didn’t continue talking about this topic with him. I put my hands in my pockets, but couldn’t find something decent. I got mad and took out two coins.

“Here, happy birthday. I really don’t know what else to give you.”

Lu Hai Kong stared at the two coins and blinked with his left eye: “My gift?”

I was immediately alert. I tightly hold my purse.

“Just these two, there’s no more.”

He froze for a moment. Dumbfounded, he looked at the two coins. A little pathetic he said: “Yun Xiang, you’re so stingy.”

After saying that he obediently put the two coins in his chest.

I looked at his shoulder and said: "Nothing is free. You carry me back home. I don't want to walk. I'm really tired."

Lu Hai Kong naturally wouldn't refuse. Obediently he put me on his back. Going outside, I suddenly remembered something.

"Little Xiang Xiang, if you want money, go to the northern protector's mansion. There's much money there."

Out of the liquor house, I realized that Lu Hai Kong came alone. With his identity now, going out at night, is really dangerous. I put my head on his shoulder and said: "You need to protect yourself first. Then you can anything else."

"I need to protect you too."

With a bit of pride Lu Hai Kong said: "I'm now able to protect you very well."

I didn't say anything more. On the way back, there's only the sound of Lu Hai Kong's calm footsteps. After walking halfway, Lu Hai Kong asked: "Yun Xiang, why did...did you drink so much wine today? Are you not happy?"

"The wine is delicious. I was not unhappy."

I leaned against his shoulder again and said: "I was only feeling life. The time flies. Days and months went by so fast."

Lu Hai Kong stopped in his tracks. I rubbed my head on his shoulder, finding a comfortable spot to sleep.

"I thought about the past."

No wonder that mortals are envious of the enjoyable, happy days in Heaven.

After hearing what I said, Lu Hai Kong didn't move for quite a while. When I started dreaming I heard vaguely: "I'm sorry, Yun Xiang."

I don't know if I was dreaming or if there's really someone feeling guilty.

After Lu Hai Kong's birthday, the air felt more tense. The court is now unable to ignore the increasing northern army. It's said that the emperor is preparing the whole army to attack the north. Father Song is on probation in the capital. He can't leave the capital.

Lu Hai Kong is so busy that I don't even see his shadow anymore.

I don't know how Lu Hai Kong view me. I also don't know how I view Lu Hai Kong. In my eyes, he's always been someone not real. He's just Chu Kong's short stay in the human realm. After he drinks the next soup of oblivion, Lu Hai Kong will never exist again.

Every day I stayed longer at Lan Xiang's house. Always drinking till I was half drunk before going back to sleep.

On the first snowfall, I went to the liquor house as usual. The only unusual thing about this day was that no matter what I said, Lan Xiang wouldn't give me wine. I was really unhappy. From my pocket, I put all the money on the table and yelled: "I've money! Look I've money! Give me wine!"

Lan Xiang only said: "You want wine? Go pour it yourself in the cellar."

I didn't hesitate, stood up, put my money back in my pocket and went to the backyard. Straight to the underground cellar. The moment I entered the cellar a big hand pulled me over and covered my mouth. A gruff man's voice said against my ears: "Do not make a sound."

He warning sounded like I already made a sound. I blinked, meaning I'll cooperate with him.

Seeing that I'm cooperating, he let go of me and kneeled down. He bowed his head and said respectfully: "Miss, forgive me for being rude."

Hearing him call me Miss, I understood; father Song sent him.

Behind the man in black, stood a scholar. In the cold weather of the north, he's still carrying a fan.

“Oh, so it’s you guys. Qing Shan student and Hei Wu. How have you been?”

This pair, one with martial arts and one with brain, has been working for father Song for a very long time. Hei Wu is in charge of practical things, while blackhearted Qing Shan student gives father Song advice in eliminating political opponents. He played a big role five years ago in eliminating Lu Hai Kong’s family. Today this two has come to the north, must be because my father is determined to take me back.

Sure enough, Qing Shan student while holding his fan said: “I’m honored that Miss still remembers us. Today we’ve come to deliver Xiang Ye’s words.”

I blocked my ears and turned away from them.

“Don’t say. I don’t want to hear them.”

Hei Wu stood up and grabbed my shoulders. Qing Shan said laughingly: “Xiang Ye said that you’ve played enough. It’s time to go home. The emperor has arranged a marriage for you. It’s the third prince.”

Even if I do not want to hear those words, they still reached my ears. I staggered and stared at the two of them: “After the emperor took the throne, his third son is still alive? Isn’t he an idiot?! My father wants me to marry him? And don’t I already have an engagement with Lu Hai Kong?”

I shook my head.

“My father...my father don’t love me anymore.”

Hei Wu loosened his hand and said: “Miss, watch what you say.”

Qing Shan student sighed: “Miss has been gone for so long. You don’t know Xiang Ye’s situation. Because Miss left, Xiang Ye has been questioned by the emperor several times. In this time of war, the emperor can only leave the authority of the capital in the hands of Xiang Ye, but because of Miss...the emperor is now suspicious. If he can find the smallest suspicious thing, the fate of Xiang Fu won’t

be any different from the general's. Miss, you as his child, needs to think about his position too. Go back to the capital and marry the third prince..."

"It's enough. Don't say anything more."

I scratched my hair irritably.

"Let me think a few days."

Hei Wu was impatient and frowned: "We don't have time to delay."

My heart didn't feel right and after hearing those words, I was annoyed: "If you take me back today by force, I'll tell my father that you torture me every day, insult me and beat me. For as long as I'm alive, I'll not let you have a day of peace!"

Hei Wu's face paled immediately. It seemed that my nickname "ruckus causing devil" wasn't useless. Qing Shan student smiled: "Miss, don't get angry. We have no intention of forcing you. I hope Miss will think carefully about what we said. No matter what, Xiang Ye is the father who protects and supports you."

Those words stabbed me in my conscience. Even though father Song did many bad things to other people. He has never mistreated me.

I pursed my lips and impatiently said: "Three days later, if I want to go with you, I'll be waiting for you at the south gate. If I'm not there, you don't need to wait anymore. Just go back and say to my father that I'm not filial."

Hei Wu wanted to say something, but Qing Shan student holds him back. Qing Shan student smiled and said: "Three days later, we'll wait for Miss at the south gate."

I walked out of the cellar and bumped into Lan Xiang's face full of guilt.

I said: "You just looked after me for my father and you also concealed it for my father. All these years, you did take care of me. There's nothing to be guilty of."

I went back early to the mansion. The guards were a little surprised. I said I want to see Lu Hai Kong, they became more surprised. After all, I never took the initiative to look for anyone.

Even though they were surprised, they didn't tell me where Lu Hai Kong was. I thought to myself that Lu Hai Kong must be doing something important. But when I walked into the hall, I heard the hearty laugh of Lu Lan: "Hai Kong, you see my goddaughter? She has brains and can do martial arts, isn't she compatible with you? Compared with that daughter of Xiang Ye, isn't she better?"

When Lu Lan was asking those things, that "goddaughter" of course wasn't there. They were so concentrated on their conversation that no one saw me. I stood silently outside the hall. I looked at the bricks, waited a long time and still didn't hear Lu Hai Kong's answer.

An unknown emotion rushed in my heart, delaying my original purpose of leaving the hall.

I was pouting and snorted while crossing the door: "O, comparing two women's qualities is a bad thing; you need to drag that "goddaughter" here and compare her with me. Openly competing our qualities, isn't that right?"

Lu Hai Kong was surprised. Shockingly, he turned his head: "Yun Xiang..."

Thinking about his silence just now, a rush of angry blood came into my heart. I want to beat him, but seeing his gray right eye, I couldn't do it.

So I just angrily gave the floor a few stomps.

"Shut up! You dare to admit I'm worse than other woman?!"

I angry shouted: "White eye wolf, stay away from me! Don't let me see you again!"

All blood drained from Lu Hai Kong's face.

I immediately realized what I said. Those heart cutting words. I covered my mouth, but the damage is already done. Seeing Lu Hai



Kong's pale face and his gaze full of grieve, I don't know what kind of feeling was in my heart. It felt like an unbearable discomfort. But in this case I couldn't bring myself to apologize. I only slapped myself two times and pulled my hair. I cried out "yiyiyaya" and ran out.

Like a madman...

## Chapter 8

---

This is the first time that it was difficult to sleep. I laid on the bed tossing and turning. No matter what I did, I couldn't throw the image of Lu Hai Kong's pale face off my mind. I sat up and sighed deeply. Chu Kong, that bastard, how could he become like this after reincarnation? He's obviously a hateful and cocky man. How did he become like this?

As long as Lu Hai Kong gets me mad once, even if it's only once, then I can heartlessly get rid of him! Why?! Why...why put that kind of expression?! That grieving expression made me feel guilty.

I sighed deeply again. Suddenly I saw a black shadow in front of my room. I raised an eyebrow, wondering if it's Qing Shan student and Hei Wu. But then I heard a subtle muttering in front of my door, my heart tightened. It's Lu Hai Kong. After being wronged, he still came to look for me. Really...he really can't let me get mad once.

He's only muttering at the doorway. Didn't knock and didn't come in. Actually, I was worried and went to the door. Through the door I heard him muttering to himself: "Yun Xiang, I'm sorry. I'm not refusing to admit. I was thinking about how I can refuse uncle and how to mention...mention...Yun Xiang. I'm sorry, it's my fault..."

He kept repeating those words several times, repeating the same phrases all over again. I was anxious after hearing him, pulled the door open and said: "What did you want to mention to your uncle?"

Lu Hai Kong was caught off guard, when I opened the door. He stared at me blankly. His face turned red, but after a while turned white.

I couldn't guess his mind. I took a deep breath and was about to apologize to him, when he grabbed my sleeves and whispered: "Yun Xiang, I'm not white eyed wolf. I know my right eye isn't beautiful, but...you don't be disgusted by my eye and don't be disgusted by me."

Even the most complex emotion, even the amount of words that I wanted to say to him, have been broken by his sentence.

He has been lingering at my door for so long, prepared so many things to say. But when he saw me, he said such a sentence.

Although he never said it, but seeing his eye injury, I know this has become his Achilles heel. I also know how much my words hurt him. I now also know that he's really afraid that I'll despise him.

For some time, looking at him, I don't know what sort of emotions I show.

Fifteen year old Lu Hai Kong is already taller than me. For the first time I seriously took a good look at his eye. In his eyes, the snow in the country yard that has been lit by the moonlight, looks really bright. This child really exists. He isn't a fleeting fragment of Chu Kong's life. But he's a real person living a real life.

I clearly understand that Song Yun Xiang's life is just a bubble. But in Lu Hai Kong's eyes, this is his whole life. His only life.

Tonight is really cold. With one hand I hold onto the door, with the other I pulled Lu Hai Kong into a hug. Both hands are now clutching his back, holding him tightly.

Lu Hai Kong's already stiff body became stiffer.

"Yun Yun Yun Yun Yun....Xiang?"

"I'm sorry," I said. "Those were only angry words. I'm sorry. I'm not disgusted by you. Don't be sad."

Lu Hai Kong didn't move, but his stiff body loosened. He hesitated for a moment, then he put his hands on my back. Loosely did he hold me. It felt like if he hold me with more strength, he'll offend me. I heard him sigh in my ear: "Yun Xiang, at that time, I didn't say anything because I was just thinking about how to refuse uncle and how to mention...mention marrying you."

I looked down because I didn't want to look him in the eye.

"These few years there was no opportunity. Yun Xiang was also

incredibly delayed. As it happens, now there's some free time. So, so I thought we could have the marriage....just now, I also convinced uncle. Yun Xiang, do you agree to this marriage?"

I couldn't think of anything so I just told him: "I need to return to the capital to help my father. I'm going to marry the third prince."

His face paled hearing those words. I pushed Lu Hai Kong, scratched my head and said: "You don't have to worry, I'm still pondering."

Lu Hai Kong tugged at my sleeve and didn't let go: "I know that Yun Xiang has sacrificed many things when coming with me to the north. And you've also suffered a lot of injustice. No matter what you've always stayed by my side. I know that Yun Xiang is good to me, I don't want to disappoint Yun Xiang...."

I rubbed my forehead. I haven't really experienced much injustice after I came here. Firstly, because I was at Lan Xiang's liquor house the whole day, so I haven't heard many gossips. Secondly, I as the daughter of the prime minister, living safe and sound on the "enemy's" ground, must be because of Lu Hai Kong. He must've suffered more injustice than I do.

Ordinarily, in these circumstances, I would've accepted his proposal. Yet this afternoon Qing Shan student brought such a news. Although in this life, I didn't have much sense. But filial piety is still something that I need to keep.

I thought for a long time, before I finally thought of an excuse: "Lu Hai Kong, you said I'm good to you, you don't want to disappoint me. But do you love me?"

After asking this, I shuddered. I kept the nauseating feelings in check and kept asking: "You respect me, you honor me, but what I want is not these. This is not love between man and woman, this is not love between couples. You...need to think again."

Lu Hai Kong was startled. He didn't think that I would say those words. He thought for a moment and said: "I don't understand that, but in this life, I will not marry someone else. Yun Xiang, the one who

needs to think again, is you.”

He didn't force me to explain anything, just smiled and said: “Yun Xiang, if you're willing, come to me and say it. If you want to postpone it, then we'll postpone it. The nights are cold, Yun Xiang you need to keep warm. I'll go back first.”

Looking at his disappearing figure, I firmly covered my face. Brat, do not laugh so beautifully, ah! You made me look like a child who has lost his temper! I was really embarrassed!

Three days later, I left a letter on the table in my room: I'm going in the mountain to hunt<sup>[1]</sup>, don't know when I'll return. Lu Hai Kong, if you've decided to fight in the army, then fight. Don't wait for me to come back before you marry.

Finally, I've decided to go alone to the south gate to follow Qing Shan student and Hei Wu back to the capital. Because I know that Lu Hai Kong can live well now without me and because in the capital, there's aged father Song. There's also my maid Cui Bi, whom I haven't seen in a long time and many other people. They don't deserve to die because of the so called political struggle, like what happened to the general mansion five years ago. Being burned to death, without finding even the corpse.

If I go back, I can help them. I should go back.

The way back is a lot faster than the way coming here. All the way, the roads were full of warning signs. The faces of the commoners were full of panic. Unknowingly, I was really nervous. In the north I isolated myself too well and Lu Hai Kong protected me too well too.

On the fifth day, after crossing the northern border and passing another city, we'll enter the territory, where the court is in control. Qing Shan student made look like an old woman. He and Hei Wu are my sons now. We are playing sons bringing mother home. Although I objected to the role of an old mother, but thinking that I'm few hundred years old, being called mother is nothing big. So I reluctantly agreed.

Passing the last gate, soldiers were doing a routine inspection.

Suddenly another soldier, riding on a horse, came to the leader. He stopped the horse and shouted: "Urgent matter! Withhold all the young women! They're not allowed to leave the city!"

While he was shouting, the other soldiers blocked the path of everyone and said: "Young women are not allowed to leave the city."

The soldier in green, on the horse, stopped at the gate. He took out a portrait and said: "All those who has some resemblance to this portrait, no matter man or women, young or old, bring them all to the protector's mansion."

Hei Wu and Qing Shan student behind me, tensed up. Qing Shan student whispered: "Miss, keep your head down. Don't look up."

I was wondering about a deep question: "How much is some resemblance?"

I heard the two behind me sigh. I don't understand why they're sighing. I looked up at the portrait and froze instantly. Which artist can paint me so like me?

In the north, aside from Lu Hai Kong, who will so carefully observe me? My mind was complicated. I bend down to look like an old woman.

The young woman were detained. The soldiers checked everyone. Qing Shan student walked on my right side, pretending to support me. Hei Wu is walking a step behind us. Passing the soldiers, Qing Shan student began his acting. He softly called: "Mother, the officers is just checking, it's nothing."

I'm too lazy to care about him, so I only bowed my head and kept walking.

We almost passed the gate when suddenly a soldier called: "Eldery, can you please lift your head a little?"

After I heard those words, I hesitated. If I'm caught here, I and Lu Hai Kong.....

I was still thinking, when Hei Wu grabbed my hand.

I stared at him blankly when he said: “Dezui<sup>[2]</sup>.”

While saying that, he lifted me with his powerful hands and throw me over his shoulders. At that moment, Qing Shan student pulled out a sword from his waist. Before the soldier could say anything, Qing Shan student already stabbed his horse's eyes.

The horse stomped his hooves and made miserable sounds. Hei Wu said: “Run.”

They dodged the footsteps of the horse, while stepping on the shoulders of those who've fallen to the ground, they ran out of the gate.

I was laying on Hei Wu's shoulder, watching the chaos at the gate. I don't know why I suddenly thought of the day of reincarnation. But today, there isn't a young man with eyes full of blame, looking at me. I suddenly felt an emptiness in my heart.

Back on the court's territory, Qing Shan student and Hei Wu were a lot more at ease. They bought a horse and we were using the main roads, it's a lot faster. Soon we arrived in the capital. When we were passing the gate, both Qing Shan student and Hei Wu said that they've got something to do and that I can return to Xiang Fu alone. I was surprised that they weren't afraid that I'll escape. But then I thought that I've nowhere to escape to in the capital, so I obediently went to Xiang Fu.

The general's mansion opposite Xiang Fu has been cleared. To historians, the general's mansion is now only a historical record.

The Xiang Fu's guards were still the same. When they saw me they were scared: “Young...Miss, you came back?”

I nodded: “I came back.”

A bodyguard's legs went soft. He hastened and ran inside. The first person I need to see, of course, is my father. The only difference I saw was, that in the hall, there isn't a furious father Song waiting for me. He was in his bedroom, a step from his deathbed. A really thin father Song.

I was a little afraid to call him. I really couldn't believe that getting old, would let someone look like this. Father Song lay on the bed, looking at me dazedly. He closed his eyes for a long time, then he sighed and said with a weak voice: "Go away...Go away, you shouldn't have come back."

I was originally a cloud, born with nothing and raised with nothing. No father or mother. I don't understand what parents' love is, but at this moment I need to treat this old man well, even he's done many bad things. In my eyes, he's just a lonely father.

"Father, "I said. "I wasn't filial. The third prince, I'm willing to marry him."

Father Song's lips trembled. He was silent for a very long time, before gathering all his strength to sit up. Sternly he said: "Who've brought you back?! Even if your father is in a bad situation, I still would not sell my daughter to survive!"

I was surprised. I was still confused when I asked: "Wasn't it you who let Qing Shan student and Hei Wu bring me back?"

Father Song looked at me casually and then abruptly laughed out loud: "Those two have been killed by the emperor, early this year. I'm afraid that the two people who pick you up, are imperial guards..."

Father Song shook his head.

"That year I did everything to bring you and Lu Hai Kong to the north...Now you still have been brought into this conflict. Yun Xiang, father is sorry to you, sorry to you're mom, sorry to brother Lu and Lu Hai Kong. And even more sorry to the late emperor."

Did everything possible to bring me and Lu Hai Kong to the north?

I thought more carefully and realized that everything was strange on the night of the fire. After those two men left , there wasn't any news coming from Xiang Fu. Such an important thing as the general's medal is missing, the court failed to send people after us. I and Lu Hai Kong walked like a turtle and there was not one soldier who has caught up with us. :Lu Lan announced his revolt, the court actually



waited five years before doing something...

I don't know how much father Song suffered in all these years by the hand of the emperor, but seeing how father Song looked today, I know that this forty year old has no more blood to bleed.

I patted him on the back and said: "Father, it's alright. I'm not so fragile."

---

### Notes

1. She meant that she'll go fight the enemy.
2. 得罪 (Dézui): is something a lower class say to the noble class. It's like saying I'm sorry. Here Hei Wu said that because he'll touch Yun Xiang and treat her roughly. In ancient times man couldn't just touch woman.

## Chapter 9 Ending 1st lifetime

---

The next day a decree came from the palace. It said that because of my marriage to the third prince, I need to go live in the palace and learn the etiquettes, until the day I marry. The emperor's intention is very clear. As long as I live in the palace, he won't need to be afraid that father Song will do something against him, when he's outside fighting the rebels. Because if father Song did something, the first one to die will be me. What a perfect plan.

After the eunuch who delivered the decree left, I went into father Song's room. He stared at the decree. His expression is unreadable. I squatted against his bedside and whispered: "Father, if you're still alive, the emperor won't do something to me. So you have to take good care of your body, live a long life and annoy the emperor to death"

Father Song sighed loudly. He raised his withered hand and gently put it on my head, touching me like when I was a kid.

"Our Yun Xiang has also grown up."

I quietly accompanied father Song for a while. Until, when he couldn't bear it anymore and wearily he fell asleep, did I leave the mansion. I climbed onto the red carriage and went into the palace.

I didn't get to see the emperor. The head of the eunuch brought me to an empty room for concubines. On the other side of the wall must be the cold palace, because every night I can hear a woman's sobbing. I find her crying beautiful, they sound like a lullaby. Every night I slept very soundly while listening to her crying.

The days in the palace are boring, but they went by quickly. It's like the time when I was in Yue Lao's temple. Then I was only worrying about how I can afford the good wine and lamenting about stingy Yue Lao. But now my mind always went back to that snowy night that Lu Hai Kong proposed to me. I blushed.

The day of the marriage is nearing. At the entrance of my place,

there are now more guards patrolling. At night I couldn't hear the women's sobbing anymore. There's only the sound of the guard's footsteps, making me more depressed than when i was in the north.

It's a snowy night again. I couldn't sleep, so I put some clothes on and walked to the window. I opened the window and happened to see a man in black making the guards faint.

I blinked. The figure of that man seems awfully familiar to me.

"Hey..."

I just opened my mouth, the man in black reflexively turned to the window. He stretched his hand and covered my mouth.

"Silence."

His face was covered with a black cloth, so the sound was a bit muffled. But I've known him for more than ten years, how can I not recognize him?

He listened for a moment and then pulled away the black cloth that was covering his face. A pair of black pupil reflected the lights of the snow.

"Yun Xiang, it's me."

I patted his hands to indicate that he can let go.

"En, I know."

Lu Hai Kong really doesn't want his life anymore. He as a rebel leader, how can he quietly sneak into the palace?

I didn't hesitate and stretched out my hand. I squeezed his face really hard. A red color came to the surface of his face.

He made some "sisi" sound of pain, but he didn't pull my hand away. He only said: "Yun Xiang, it hurts."

"Lu Hai Kong."

I looked at him for a moment before saying: "Don't you want to live anymore?"

He also looked at me and said: "I want, but I also want you."

It's obviously an indecent sentence, but coming from him I didn't hear any indecent meaning. It felt like a child full of positive energy, swearing that he'll study hard.

I was silent so Lu Hai Kong said: "It's not that I've lost my mind, nor is it that nobody tried to discouraged me...."

He paused for a moment. He looks like he's remembering some terrible things. He drooped his eyes slightly and continued: "But when I heard you've been kidnapped..."

"Nobody kidnapped me," I interrupted him. With a cold and clear voice I said: "I left you a letter. I was willing to come back."

Lu Hai Kong didn't look at me and continued to say: "The soldiers at the gate told me that you left on someone's shoulder and that you were treated roughly..."

Seeing him with such a helpless look, I couldn't bring myself to be heartless. I deeply inhaled the cold air and said: "Lu Hai Kong, I left you a letter. You knew that I left willingly."

His lips trembled as if he wants to refute me. But for me and for himself, he tried to hide it. In the end he fell silent. He curved his lips and smiled without a trace of humor in his eyes, he said: "Yun Xiang, you don't need to always be so honest."

"Go back. Protect yourself well."

"Why?"

He stood outside the window and looked at the ground.

"Knowing each other for sixteen years, accompanying each other in life and death for five years...Yun Xiang, I know you must have a reason."

How can I tell him? What father Song did that year was self protection? I abandoning him, is for my father, his father's murderer?

Living together for five years in the north, we didn't mention a word

from the past. Because in this lifetime my blood and his hatred are the most deadly friction between us.

I also curved my lips and smiled. I made a helpless appearance and said: "Lu Hai Kong, you don't love me as a man."

Lu Hai Kong hesitated. Slowly, his face turned green. He gritted his teeth and said: "Song Yun Xiang, even at this moment you don't want to open yourself to me. You still don't believe me!"

Outside I heard many footsteps coming. My heart tightened. I hurry Lu Hai Kong to go. Lu Hai Kong looked at me for a moment, with a face full of disappointment. Finally, he turned and gathered some internal energy. He disappeared in the darkness.

Just when he left, the imperial guards arrived. They saw the guards lying on the floor. One of them came to the window and asked: "Where's is the rebel?"

"Rebel?"

I yawned.

"I didn't see anyone."

"Why are all the guards on the ground?"

I raised an eyebrow en grunted: "I was sleeping like a dead man. The sound of fighting woke me up."

The chief knitted his eyebrows, barely bowed to me and said: "Miss Song, I beg your pardon, but I was ordered to search for the intruder."

He finished his sentence without looking at me. He waved at the other guards and yelled: "Search!"

They kicked my door open and turned the place where I sleep into a mess.

I looked at them coldly when they left without finding anyone.

I closed the door, tidied the bed and lay on it. My mind kept going back to the words Lu Hai Kong said before he left: "Open myself?"

Believe in him? This brat grew up and keeps saying shit that nobody understands.

I hugged the blanket tightly and gave it a few punches. Little wife's sorrow finally appeared!

I can almost see Emperor Li's bearded face, shaking with laughter. In my heart, I hope that the *mud horse*<sup>[1]</sup> will crush Emperor's Li face. While pounding on the blanket I was laughing in my heart. You've seen enough, seen enough, seen enough!

Regardless how tangled my heart was the next few days, eventually the day of the marriage has come. A red carriage is waiting outside for me. A maid helped me do a heavy make up which I've never done before. She also put a heavy phoenix crown on me. I put on the most beautiful clothes that I've ever worn in this lifetime, going to marry a man whom's face I've never seen. It's said that this man's mind has a little problem...

Third prince is the oldest among the living sons of the emperor. Even though he's sick, but being someone from the royal family, a grand ceremony is still required.

My husband will come get me at the palace door. He was riding on a big horse and I was sitting in a grand carriage, going around half of the capital, going on the stage, declaring to the world and make an offering to the ancestors.

The me, who was sitting in the carriage, covered with a boring red veil, listening to the hoofs of the horses, suddenly got an inexplicable feeling in my heart.

Since the beginning of this lifetime, I knew that there will be a day like this. But I always thought that the man outside would be Lu Hai Kong. I always rebelled against it, but now I'm even more dissatisfied with the situation.

Really want to...stretch one leg out to let the man fall from the horse.

In the end, I restrained from this impulse. Until the red carriage stopped, the curtain of the carriage was opened and a man's hand

appeared under the veil. Watching this pair of fine white hand, I suddenly thought of the night Lu Hai Kong stood outside the window, covering my mouth with his hand. His hands were cold and felt rough. That child was born with a life as precious as the prince, but he has suffered so much pain.

I restrained the feelings in my heart and hold his hand. The red veil blocked my sight. I can only see my feet on the ground. The man beside me held me and kept asking: "What's wife's name, ah? Oh, wife's surname is Song, Prime Minister Song's daughter. What's wife's age, ah? Oh, wife's age is a little old, already twenty. Wife does not want to get married? Oh, I can't ask this question, hehe."

I felt his mind is really not so good.

"Ladder," the third prince yelled after a few steps. "How do I climb a ladder? Oh, the ladder needs to be climbed step by step. Above is the stage, need to be serious."

My mouth twitched. I let him slowly guide me. After the last step on the ladder, he walked three steps and asked: "What do I need to do? Oh, bow to heaven, bow to ancestors, bow to parents."

I totally don't want to bother with him. So I just let him lead me like a corpse.

"Aiya, how come the prime minister is not here? Oh, Prime Minister Song died last night at home."

A cold sweat entered my heart. I didn't care and ripped the veil of my head. I also didn't care about the place, grabbed the third prince clothes and sternly asked: "What did you say?!"

The third prince's eyes swept across my face. I couldn't ignore the gloat in his eyes. How can a fool live till now in the royal struggle? But right now those things have nothing to do with me. I was so angry that my eyes became red. I glared at the third prince and said word by word: "What, did, you, say?"

"What did I say? Oh, prime minister Song Qin Wen died, Xian Fu Miss doesn't have any backing anymore."

My body turned soft. I let go of him. Not long ago I had touched father Song's hands and he affectionately caressed my head. Life and death are really too easy in the human realm. While in trance I remembered the words drunken Yue Lao used to say "mortals are helpless, immortals have no feelings."

All the noise, chaos and people in front disappeared in front of me. I stood there and looked up at the sky. I yelled: "你大爷的<sup>[2]</sup>!"

Suddenly someone grabbed my hand really hard. He bent my hands to my back. I involuntarily bent down in pain. A sound at my ear made me come back to reality. A guard shouted at my ear: "Fearless! You dare to beat the third prince!"

I lifted my head and glared at the guards. Several guards, protecting the third prince, took a few steps back. The third prince touched his neck with an arrogant face. I hated him so much, but I was so helpless. Today, I, a cloud fairy am being bullied by a few mortals. This feeling is really not good.

The next instant, came a noise. I haven't understood the situation yet, when the two guards holding my hands, tumbled to the ground with a "plop" sound.

I was still surprised, when an arm tightly holds my waist.

The man holding me unleashed his sword. Guards were falling to the ground. I was shocked. When he stopped for a moment I fiercely pushed him. I angrily shouted: "You fucking stupid idiot! Is this a place you should come to?!"

Lu Hai Kong took a step back. He steadied his body. He looked at me with one red eye.

"I'm a fucking stupid idiot!"

In the north Lu Hai Kong learned a lot of curse words. Occasionally I would hear his rough voice cursing, while I was passing the training fields. But to me he was always a gentleman. He never even raised his voice against me.

Today, he lost his cool.



I don't know from where a few people in black appeared. They made a group fighting with the guards. On the stage there weren't many guards left. Lu Hai Kong killed a few. The remaining ones were at the third prince side. They did not easily come forward. They just kept guarding the third prince. I and Lu Hai Kong began to yell at each other on this stage.

"I don't want you to save me! Go away!"

"I've decided to save you," Lu Hai Kong yelled. "Do not say those shitty excuses again! Love between man and woman? Love between husband and wife? What if I don't understand that shit? I only know that if you're marrying him willingly today, I would immediately leave. If you can live happily and well, I would not say a word. But will you? Song Yun Xiang, can you swear that you'll live happily?! If you can....."

His voice stopped. He touched my cheeks with his fingertips. His rough fingers, that didn't belong to his age, are prove of his hard life.

Lu Hai Kong said hoarsely: "If you can, why the fucking hell are you crying?"

"How... the fucking hell would I know why I'm crying."

I thought for a long time, looking through countless of words: Excuses, bratty words, denying words.

But all those words came to my lips and became: "Father passed away..."

Lu Hai Kong was a bit startled. He put his hands on my head. A bit unaccustomed he caressed my head and said comfortingly: "Don't cry."

His face was a shade paler and he lowered his voice: "Yun Xiang, we'll talk when we go back."

I was still in shock, but Lu Hai Kong grabbed my waist without any explanation and moved rapidly to the ground below the stage. He put two fingers in his mouth and whistled. All the people in black began to withdraw from the fight.

The strange thing is that there are more and more guards. It felt really strange. Now that father Song is gone, I don't know how pleased the emperor is. I and the third prince are now useless. He could've just ordered me to mourn for three years. But the emperor didn't let a word get away about my father's death. He still carried on with this marriage. Since he is so insistent on carrying it, he must've a good reason.

Now it seems that the emperor already guessed that Lu Hai Kong will come. And Lu Hai Kong must've known that if he appeared, it'll be really dangerous....

I hold onto Lu Hai Kong's neck, looking at his side profile. Suddenly I thought with a bit of unwillingness: *Why do I only have one lifetime with him?*

Suddenly something flashed brightly before my eyes. I turned my head to look. The third prince pushed his guards away and stood out.

I said to Lu Hai Kong: "I can't breath holding like this. Lu Hai Kong, piggyback me."

Lu Hai Kong's arm used a little strength. In a blink of eye, I was on his back. I wondered: "What sort of Kung Fu is this?"

I coughed and cleared my throat: "The Kung Fu is very convenient for moving things."

Lu Hai Kong said softly: "Yun Xiang, let's talk when we're out of the capital."

I nodded: "Alright."

I rested my head on his shoulder. Suddenly I remembered that there was one time when Lu Hai Kong was a kid, he was tired of playing at Xiang Fu and he wanted me to piggyback him home. At that time I just wanted to leave him there, but he cried so sadly. I reluctantly piggyback him home. It was sunset at that time. The general's mansion and Xiang Fu is just a few steps from each other, but he fell asleep on my shoulder.

Now the sun is shining brightly, but I was distracted to see what the sunlight is like. I closed my eyes and gently said: "So, being carried by someone is so comfortable. No wonder you can fall asleep."

My body felt a bit sore. I hold onto his neck. I kept holding and let Lu Hai Kong do the running. His breath is becoming more rapid. He yelled: "Yun Xiang, hold tighter!"

"En," I answered. I used all my strength to cling onto his neck. We're not out of the capital yet. It's still not safe, so I can't let go.

Although it was somewhat vague, but I still saw Emperor Li scratching his ear before the bookshelf anxiously: "It's not the same, ah! It's not the same as what I wrote! Why did the wrong person die?"

I grinned. Hmpf, big bearded Li, you thought I was easy to bully? You want Lu Hai Kong to die before me? If I've also drank the soup of oblivion, my life after his death will be really unhappy. I would've been begging for death. But now he won't die. He still has a long life to live and many wonderful things to experience. Not as one of Chu Kong's reincarnation, but as Lu Hai Kong, a real living person, he will have a wonderful life.

I don't how much time has passed. I felt someone patting my face.

"Yun Xiang? Yun Xiang...."

His voice was sensual, with a third of hoarseness.

I opened my eyes and saw that it was snowing. Lu Hai Kong's face was above me. His hair was full of snow, making him look like an old man.

"Aiya, it's snowing."

I've a sore throat, but surprisingly my spirit felt really full, I was feeling very light, lighter than when I was a cloud spirit.

Lu Hai Kong hugged me and whispered: "Don't be afraid, we'll go look for a physician. They can heal you."

Hearing him say this, I remembered that when we were leaving the

stage, the third prince shot an arrow. It went right into my back. I don't need to guess to know that it has poison on it. Imperial poison, how can anyone just cure it?

I'm now in such high spirits, must be...because I'm going back.

"Lu Hai Kong, my father did you wrong. Now, I'm paying back for him."

"Song Yun Xiang, you've never owed me anything."

He gritted his teeth and say: "With what will you be paying back?"

"Ah, this is good, "I smiled. "We've settled it for now. In the future, we won't own each other anything."

I narrowed my eyes and saw the soul collectors coming from afar.

"Lu Hai Kong, in your next life don't run into me anymore..."

I haven't e finished speaking, when he bent closer to me. I was appalled. I felt his warm lips on my cold lips. But now he's so close, I couldn't see his face. I only felt salty water drop into my mouth, letting my lips and teeth felt bitter.

For the time being, I didn't want to care if his behavior is indecent. I only felt that my heart is also aching. He spoke against my lips: "In the next lifetime, next next lifetime, I'll run into you."

I smiled bitterly: "Don't say that. You'll regret it..."

After this lifetime is over, I will be reincarnated earlier. Lu Hai Kong surely won't find me after his death. Then he'll turn back into Chu Kong. After regaining his memories, he probably won't want to come find me anymore.....

From now on we won't be meeting again. Our wrong beginning will end.

"You need to finish this lifetime well. Strive to live on."

I closed my eyes and smiled: "I'll go first."

My soul left my body. I was immediately caught by the soul

collectors. They kept bickering and leading me to the road to the nether world.

Suddenly my heart has a strange feeling like heartache. I looked back and saw Lu Hai Kong holding the cold body closely. He is crying like a child.

---

### Notes

1. 草泥马(cǎonímǎ, mud horse): It is a play on the words cào nǐ mā (艹你妈), literally, "fuck your mother"
2. 你大爷的 ( Nǐ dàyé de), this is a curse word. I don't know the exact meaning, but think is "damn you". So she's cursing at Emperor Li.

# Chapter 10

---

The soul collectors took me to the nether world. I must've escaped the next six lifetimes. I sighed a long sigh. I want to laugh out loudly, but I don't know why I couldn't laugh at all. My lips still have the taste of Lu Hai Kong's lips, making my heart sour.

He is still alive. In my life there will be no little fool called Lu Hai Kong anymore.

I looked back at the road to the netherworld. A feeling of loss came over me.

"Hurry up! Hurry up! Why are you so slow?! What tricks are you playing," a ghost yelled with his tiny voice. He stared very alert at me.

I pouted: "Why are you so impatient? This time I will obediently drink the soup of oblivion."

Temporarily forgetting these feelings is also a good thing.

That brat heard my words and laughed coldly: "Soup of oblivion? You still want to be reincarnated? First stay obediently for eight or ten years in the netherworld to pay for your sins, then we can talk."

I asked: "Pay for what?"

The little ghost leads me deeper into the netherworld, but we're not going into the direction of the bridge (where souls wait for their turn to drink the soup of oblivion and cross over the bridge to be reincarnated).

I suddenly tensed up and was nervous. Could they are dragging me to the pan?

The heaven and earth saw that I haven't committed any serious crime, ah!

I was still lost in thoughts when the little ghost said: "Last time you and that celestial star Chu Kong caused a mess in the netherworld.

Madam Meng took a leave of three thousand years. The netherworld already doesn't have enough manpower. Now because of you it has less manpower. We've wasted a lot of time. That celestial star Chu Kong was polite. He obediently stayed here for five years to atone for his sins. But you, you just turned your butt and went to reincarnate. Hmpf, hmpf, the netherworld doesn't bother with the human world, but now that you've come back, we won't go easy on you!"

I swallowed. How could I have forgotten that time?

The netherworld has many duties and they want to punish someone. Even if I have a thousand of lifetimes on me, I still need to suffer this punishment before I can go.

This this...this delay. If I get punished till Lu Hai Kong died, then would I need to be reincarnated with him again?

While I was still loss in thoughts, the little ghost led me to Yanwang's<sup>[1]</sup> palace.

"Yangwang, the cloud fairy has been brought."

After the little ghost finished speaking, there was no reply. I looked up and saw two feet placed on top of a desk. Behind the desk, there was a man in black sitting on a chair. His face was covered with a book. He was in a deep sleep.

The little ghost shouted again: "Yanwang! The cloud fairy has been brought!"

The man in the chair moved. The book on his face fell on the ground with a "pa" sound.

"Ah...en. Good good."

He put his legs down, wiped his mouth and sat up. He turned a page of a book on the messy desk. With eyes still full of sleep, he asked: "Ah, that, what fairy? What crime did the fairy commit?"

My mouth twitched. Is this really the renowned Yanwang? He must be a replacement. He looks like a white dough and his behavior is

like a wretched uncle. The magistrate beside him helplessly sighed.

“Is the cloud fairy, who caused a disruption in the netherworld twenty years ago.”

“Oh,” Yangwang’s eyes lit up. “It’s you, ah?! You did well, girl. The netherworld was very lively then. It was very amusing! Haha...”

The magistrate next to him coughed. Yanwang pressed his lips together to refrain from laughing and said with a serious look: “Well, what do you think we should do, magistrate?”

“Twenty years ago, celestial star Chu Kong was punished for five years, but cloud fairy Xiang Zi went to reincarnate and fled to the human realm. That’s a really evil thing to do, so I think her punishment should be tripled. I ask Yanwang to make her work for fifteen years in the netherworld. This will also let the ghosts know that the netherworld is a strict place. Even a light mistake will receive a heavy punishment.”

Yanwang nodded: “Good, let’s do it as you say.”

After saying that he went back to sleep in his chair.

They decided this sentence as easy as choosing what to eat at noon: scrambled eggs or fried eggs.

Out of Yanwang’s palace, the little ghost took me to the bridge. Ghosts are still standing in a neat line as in the past. The little ghost pointed at the big pan and said: “In the future, you’ll replace madam Meng at making soup. Don’t let the soup fall over the pan. After fifteen years of making soup, you can go and be reincarnated.”

I thought for a while and felt that fifteen years is not a very long time. Chu Kong needs to live for at least fifteen years. I felt relieved at that thought, picked up the spoon and began making soup.

In the netherworld there’s no day or night. It’s always dark here. From where I make soup I can see the people coming down from the reincarnated circle. All kinds of people come here, but they all have the same desolated look. At first when I saw them like that I feel for them. Over time I turned numb to those faces. Whether



they're sad, crying or laughing, I would only remind them when they're distracted with a few words: "Stand in the line. Here's your soup."

Without knowing it, twelve years have passed. Seeing that I only have three years left, I proudly kept my head high and continued to make soup. But fate played a big joke on me.

In the gloomy days as usual, at the other end of the reincarnation circle, appeared a really familiar figure. I was stunned for a moment that the spoon fell into the pot. I pointed my trembling finger at him in disbelief.

"Lu Hai Kong!"

Originally I thought that I'll never see him again. Originally I thought that we broke our next six lifetimes together...

I said in distraught: "I calculated everything but didn't count that you'll have a short life!"

The netherworld is a quite place. Everyone can hear me sighing through gritted teeth. The ghosts look at me blankly. Lu Hai Kong on the other side of the road also hesitates for a moment. His gaze fell onto me. After the moment of hesitation, his eyes squint dangerously and he walked towards me. The speed is very fast. A bad feeling comes over me.

Now that this guy is in the netherworld, he has all his memories back. He's no longer the Lu Hai Kong who loved me dearly, but one of the twelve celestial stars Chu Kong. Even if he remembered his experience as Lu Hai Kong, in his eyes that's just one episode of his life. In today's Chu Kong's eyes, I'm a madman who has bitten his shoulders, fought with him and scratched him. A shrew who didn't care about face and will fight with him regardless. The jinx who framed him and let him be punished for five years in the netherworld. Now he must want to cut me into pieces.

My heart felt a little guilty, but he obviously provoked me first to do those things. I was only protecting myself. Besides, I was so bighearted to rescue him and let him live in happiness for so many

more years. He should be owing me a favor and be grateful to me.

I haven't finished comforting myself when I saw Chu Kong pull out a red whip. Aside from the loud shout, he didn't say anything and threw the whip in my direction. I was stunned. Looking at his face, which is the same as Lu Hai Kong's face, my legs wouldn't move.

The whip grazed my neck. The burning pain brought me back to reality. I touched my neck. There was blood on my fingers. The whip must've cut my skin open. I lifted my head and looked at Chu Kong. Chu Kong was a little surprised when he saw that he really hit me.

"You..."

He frowned and shouted: "Are you an idiot? Such a slow whip and you couldn't dodge it?"

I also frowned: "You hit me and yet you dare to shout at me?"

"Who...Who knows you couldn't dodge it."

Indeed, I could've dodged the whip. The one I couldn't dodge is Lu Hai Kong.

I walked to him. I didn't care if I could beat Chu Kong, I just grabbed his sleeve and said: "You, short-lived ghost, it's a waste of my life to save you."

Chu Kong was stunned for a moment, frowned and said fiercely: "Who wants you to save me?!"

He paused for a moment. A strange emotion came into his eyes and then it turned into anger.

"You actually still dare to mention that lifetime to me! How dare you..."

He choked: "How dare you let me..."

He couldn't continue to say a thing for a while, so I said: "I was thinking that we wouldn't have to see each other again after this lifetime. You didn't live a long life. Wasting all my efforts. How could you die?"

I suddenly remembered what Lu Hai Kong said when I died. I shouted angrily: "Very good, no wonder when I was dying you said that we'll meet again in the next lifetime and next next lifetime! You are fucking putting a curse on me! You wicked man!"

Chu Kong's face paled. He also grabbed my sleeve and said: "You've come to the netherworld for many years and you didn't go to reincarnate! It's obviously you who have an ulterior motive. You also want to be entangled with me in the next lifetime! You insidious woman!"

"Insidious?"

I pointed at the pan full of soup and said: "Boiling soup for more than ten years is called insidious?! If you, little son of a bitch, didn't cause a mess in the netherworld, do I need to suffer this punishment?!"

"I caused a mess in the netherworld?"

At the mention of that, Chu Kong got angrier. His loud tone of voice changed to a scary soft voice: "I innocently did five years of hard labor. In the end you dare to say that it's my fault! Soup of oblivion... you still dare to mention soup of oblivion?!"

The grip on my hand tightened. I only felt my hand turn numb.

I panicked and exclaimed: "What do you want to do?! What do you want to do?!"

Chu Kong dragged me to the bridge. While he was dragging me he picked a bowl of soup. The ghost around us was scared of the aura Chu Kong is emitting.

After the twenty years, the netherworld is in chaos again.

Chu Kong grabbed my jaw and forced my mouth open. He smiled coldly and poured the soup into my mouth: "In the past lifetime you escaped before drinking, making me live a bleak and desolate life. In this lifetime, you can't escape."

His power is on a higher level than mine. I couldn't move even the slightest bit. I could only make bubbles in my mouth and spit the

soup out of my mouth.

Chu Kong seemed to be obsessed with making me drink soup. The more I spit, the more he poured. I drank bowl after bowl.

“This will make up for what you did the past lifetime. This lifetime, don’t even try to escape!”

“Villain!”

While I was gulping the soup down, I severely scolded him. Now I wish that I was trained in any kind of arts. Something that can make the person before my eyes suffer. Something that’ll crush the enemies’ bones, crushing them till they’re powders!

I don’t know how many bowls of soup I’ve drunken. I heard the distant shouting voice of the magistrate. Chu Kong flew over the bridge and went into the reincarnation circle.

This...this little bastard! He dares to copy me!

He remembers! He has all the memories! How dreary will my next life be?!

This is still nothing. The real bad news is when the panicked magistrate said: “Hurry! Lift the cloud fairy! Drinking too much soup of oblivion will let her become an idiot after reincarnation!”

I lay on the ground and burped with an awkward face. I just want to call some beautiful girls to have them do beautiful campaign.

卧槽, 尼玛<sup>[2]</sup>.

---

## Notes

1. Yanwang (King Yan) is the god of death. Yan is not only the ruler but also the judge of the underworld and passes judgment on all the dead.
2. She’s playing again with words. 卧槽, 尼玛 (Wò cáo, ní mǎ) it sounds like “I fuck your mother.”



# Chapter 11

---

I hold onto Yanwang's tight and wept bitterly. I begged him to let me boil soup for a few more years in the netherworld. Yanwang looked very conflicted. He was soft-hearted and looked at the magistrate for a few times. The cold magistrate only said: "The netherworld has strict justice. People who are not punishable can't be punished."

I howled in pain: "I'm punishable. I beg you! You punish me for a few more years. It's better if you punish me for thirty or more years. I'll burn incense to thank you!"

The magistrate was unmoved. Yanwang sighed loudly, touched my head and said: "Xiao Xiang Zi, don't cry. You can't escape something that's fated."

I refuse to give in: "Why?! We obviously caused a mess again, why are we not punished?!"

Yanwang picked his nose.

"Well, there's no protest from anyone and it didn't have a big impact on the netherworld, so you won't be punished."

"I can now go lift the pan and pour away all the soup, delaying all the souls that need to be reincarnated."

The magistrate looked at me coldly and said: "I advise you not to do it. That's a serious crime for which you'll be flogged."

I lowered my head, crying from unfairness.

Yanwang bit his lips and said: "Well, celestial Chu Kong needs to spend a love lifetime with you. Making you an idiot, he won't have it easy either."

I wiped my tears and said: "He didn't drink the soup of oblivion this lifetime. He'll remember everything clearly, so he won't like me anymore. If I as a fool fall into his hands, I'll die a cruel death or an even more cruel death..."

“Well, you can’t be so sure,”Yanwang interrupted me.

He searched for a while on his desk and took a double sided mirror out.

“Look, in the past lifetime celestial star Chu Kong loved you deeply.”

I didn’t dare to look at the Lu Hai Kong in the mirror. I was afraid that when I see him cry, I’ll cry too. I murmured: “That’s not Chu Kong.”

“Is or isn’t, is just a thought. Even he himself don’t know if he is or isn’t, how can you be so sure?”

Yanwang’s words were vague. It’s like those stupid gods in heaven speaking very beautiful, but with words that no one understands.

I pinched Yanwang’s leg really hard and said: “Get to the point.”

Yanwang made a “sisi” sound and took two deep breaths.

“This thing called love is better if you, Xiao Xiang Zi, experience it yourself. “

I increased my strength and pinched his leg. Yanwang’s said very fast: “Magistrate, magistrate, quickly pull her away. Let her go back to boil soup. After three years she can go and be reincarnated.”

I was ruthlessly dragged out. Before the door of Yanwang’s palace closed, I couldn’t help myself and took a peek at the Lu Hai Kong in the mirror. He was still young, but his hair has turned white. He was in front of an isolated snow-covered grave. Slowly he poured wine onto the ground. He looked like his mind was somewhere else.

I felt like something is pinching my heart, making it unable to breath.

Each passing day, the days of making soup is more painful. But no matter what I did, three years passed really fast. The little ghosts carried me and thrown me into the circle of reincarnation.

“Fucking Chu Kong! Next time I see you in the netherworld, I’ll pull all your hair out!”

Hair...hair...hair...In the reincarnation circle those last words kept repeating.

After a while I lost my senses.

Dida dida.

A sticky liquid kept dripping against my ears. It was silent for a moment and the next there were many voices.

I don't know how much time has passed. The liquid stopped dripping.

Someone lifted the wooden lid above my head. The light of the sun was blazing. A boy's face appeared before me. Mother said that seeing a boy older than me, I need to call him big brother.

I obediently said: "*Da gege*<sup>[1]</sup>."

The boy was disgusted when I call him that.

"In this lifetime, we met in such occasion! Bastard *heavenly emperor Li*<sup>[2]</sup>."

I stared at him blankly. He frowned and also stared at me. He looked very confused.

Suddenly a gruff voice called: "*Shaozu*<sup>[3]</sup>."

The boy bit his lips and put the wooden lid back above my head. The sound of his footsteps sounded further and further away.

I continue to sit down in the barrel, holding my legs. Mother said she wants to play hide and seek. If she didn't find me, I couldn't go out. But it's really strange...obviously it was mother who put me in here. How come she still hasn't find me after such a long time? Is it that the adults are eating something delicious and didn't tell me?

I used all my strength to push the lid away and climbed out of the barrel.

"Mother," I yelled, while walking. I didn't see anyone in the yard. There's only blood everywhere, it looks the same as when the cook killed a chicken. I'm very unhappy: "Eating chicken and they didn't call me?"

I searched in the kitchen and in my parents' chamber, but I didn't



even see their shadows. I walked into the hall and saw a bunch of people in black kneeling on the floor. The only one standing with his hands on his back is the little boy. I'm pleased and yelled: "Da gege, did you see my mother?"

The people in black turned and looked at me. One person stood up and came to me while carrying a bloody sword. I blinked and asked: "Are you guests? Are it you who helped the cook kill the chicken? But where's the cook?"

The man in black coldly said: "You'll see them soon."

He raised his sword. Blood dripped onto my face. I blinked and stared at him.

"Hey, drop the sword," the boy said.

The man in black before me hesitated for a moment. The boy continued: "Let her go back with us."

All the people in black began to talk: "But shaozhu, she..."

"I said bring her back."

The boy walked to me and stood beside the man in black. He stared at me for a moment. Suddenly his face is in front of me. He said in a soft voice: "Originally, I wanted to let you fend for yourself. But yet you fell into my hands yourself. With that being the case, I'll kindly accept you."

He pinched my cheeks.

"Xiao Xiang Zi, what do you say? Should we bully you or should we seriously bully you or should we severely bully you?"

He laughed.

"No matter what, thinking about the future days, is making me indescribable happy, haha!"

"My name isn't Xiao Xiang Zi, it's Yang Xiao Xiang."

I blinked again and looked at him.

“Da gege, pinching my cheeks hurts.”

He loosened his hand and looked at me smilingly. It looks like when the cook caught a fat pig.

“From now on, your name is Xiao Xiang Zi. Be my....well, disciple. What do you think?”

“Not thinking,” I said. “Mother killed a chicken and she didn’t let me eat it yet. I’m not going with you.”

“Your mother went to my house to eat chicken. You need to come with me.”

I thought for a moment: “Are dad and cook also there?”

“All is there.”

“Da gege, lead.”

I stuck my hand in front him. The boy paused. He hesitated for a moment before holding my hand. He coughed twice and said: “You have to call me *Shifu*<sup>[4]</sup>. I’m now a generation higher than you. You need to respect me.”

“Yes, da gege.”

“It’s shifu.”

“I know, da gege.”

My forehead was in pain. He flicked my forehead. I touched my forehead, feeling a bit wronged, I said: “Shifu...”

He nodded in satisfaction. He looks like he’s in a really good mood...

I haven’t seen my parents since the time I left home with shifu. Shifu said my parents entrusted me to him and that I only need to listen to him.

I scratched my head. I didn’t understand the meaning behind those words. But shifu doesn’t look like a bad guy. I’ll be obedient.

Only after arriving at shifu’s house did I know that his name is Chu

Kong. He's eight years old and the shaozhu of Shengling sect. All the people from the sect is full of praises about him. Wherever I went to, I'll hear that he's a genius, a prodigy. The praises went on and on.

But shifu didn't take those titles to heart. He's obviously only three years older than me, but he always pretended to be an adult.

He likes to order me around. Always making me do all sorts of things like making his bed. Even on a cold day, I still have to fan at his bedside.

At the beginning I didn't think that there was something wrong. After all, the food shifu gave me is quite good. Every one of them has many meat.

But after a long time I began to think it's very strange. Finally, one day, I realized the reason while hearing the sect people talk.

"Shifu, I should not call you shifu."

At the time Chu Kong was reading a book on the couch.

He lightly swept his eyes over me.

"What objection do you have, ah? No need to mention it. I don't accept it."

"But..."

I was very frustrated.

"They said I'm your little wife, whom shifu is raising."

Shifu's body went stiff. He was silent for a moment, turned a page and asked without much feeling: "Who said that?"

"They."

"Next time, if someone said these gossips, just kick him directly in his crotch."

"Alright, "I answered and continued to fan him.

Later, some people really talked about these "gossip" in front of me.

I did exactly as shifu told me and bravely kicked his crotch. But my kick was only halfway, when he grabbed me. The martial arts of the people in Shengling sect are not bad. That day I suffered a hard beating.

I cried out loudly, making shifu who was reading in his room, come out. The moment he appeared before me frowning, all my grievances instantly broke out. I run to him and hugged his waist, making his clothes full of tears and snot.

Shifu's body went a slightly stiff. He asked in a cold voice: "What is this about?"

I whimpered and vaguely told him what has happened. But it seems like shifu haven't heard a word I said. He knelt down. I took advantage, hugged his neck and put my face on his shoulder. I grumbled, told him the whole story and finally I only kept repeating "my butt hurts, my butt hurts."

Shifu seemed very unhappy. He put his hand on my back and lifted me. My legs naturally hold his waist. My whole body was attached to him. I was still crying. Shifu isn't very tall, but he still could hold me steadily. I heard him asking sternly: "Did you beat her?"

The man who beat my ass muttered for a long time before an "en" sound came out.

"Why?"

He muttered again for a long time: "She wants to kick my..."

Shifu nodded. He seemed to understand everything at that moment. He took two steps forward and said: "Open your legs."

I heard a pumping sound. I didn't understand why, so I temporarily stopped crying. I rubbed my face against shifu and changed my position to look at the man who've beat me. The man's face was green for a moment. He was in a squatting position. The man saw shifu's flying kick. He shook, but still firmly stood there and did not move.

Shifu said: "This time is only a light punishment. Next time, if I hear

that you're talking about things you shouldn't talk about, behind my back..."

Shifu stamped on the floor. The white jade brick broke apart with a "balabala" sound.

"Your crotch will be like this brick."

Shifu turned around and walked away handsomely, while holding me.

But after two steps, he paused. His faint words were: "And do not bully something you shouldn't bully."

I didn't understand his words, but after that day the way the people of Shengling sect treated me changed dramatically. While eating my bowl also has more meat. And also after that day, I got a few new requirements from shifu.

He hold my face and said: "Why do you look more stupid in this lifetime..."

I was gnawing on a chicken foot. With a mouth of oil, I dazedly looked at him.

Shifu frowned disgustedly. He lets go of my face. While wiping his hands, he said: "Well, you're still young. However, someone that I, celestial star Chu Kong considers an enemy, shouldn't be too weak. Even being bullied by a passerby...you're degrading me, the celestial star."

"Shifu, can you speak words that I understand?"

I tried to discuss with him, but shifu didn't seem to hear a thing. He looked at me for a moment. Suddenly he said: "En, I've decided. You'll start learning martial arts today. Celestial star, I, will personally teach you."

"What's learning martial arts?"

"It's a magic skill for when in the future, if you want to kick someone's crotch, you won't be picked up and be beaten again."

I thought for a moment and decided that this thing is really important.

I obediently nodded.

*Comments:*

*A smile on my face.*

1. 大哥哥 (Dà gēgē): *big brother.*
2. *I decided to call emperor Li heavenly emperor Li. After all, he's the emperor of heaven. I called him emperor Li for ten chapters. He may hold a grudge against me and make my next lifetime a hell. So I'll now obediently call him heavenly emperor Li.*
3. 少主 (Shǎo zhǔ): 主 (master, lord) this is what the Chinese call a master of a sect. There's 少 (little) before 主. Chu Kong is the little master of a sect.
4. 师父 (shīfu): *this also means master, but it's used by disciples.*

# Chapter 12

---

There's a big snowy mountain behind the Shengling sect. The top is covered in snow all year round. Shengling sect has a manor on top of the mountain called Fengxueshan (wind snowy mountain) manor. No one lives in the manor. It's only used for martial arts purposes.

Shifu said that since he's teaching me martial arts, we'll do it at the manor. He said that the air there is better for practicing. But climbing a mountain is already a challenge for me. I tried for half a month, but there isn't a time in which I reached the top. Often when I reached halfway, I would just sit onto the snow and won't get up. Shifu will then squeeze my face; I'll just look at him blankly. Finally, it's always shifu, who'll piggyback me back down the mountain.

One time shifu was really angry. He pinched me really hard and said: "You are doing this on purpose, aren't you?! Is this training you or training me, ah?! Today, I'll not piggyback you. If you can go down the mountain, then go down. If you can't go down, then you can continue to sit here!"

After saying that, he left. I obediently sat there, from noon till evening. I then watched the moon climbed onto the mountain.

I was hungry and my legs were numb. The moon turned from one to two then to three and finally, it shook brightly. I closed my eyes, wanting to sleep. Just as I was about to lie down someone picked me up.

"Fool!"

While cursing, that person cleaned the snow on my back.

I sniffed. It's the smell of shifu, warm and clean like the first ray of sunshine.

I subconsciously clung to his shoulder in a warm hug. My head rubbed on his neck.

“Shifu, really cold.”

“If it’s cold, don’t you know how to stand up and walk?!”

“Before I was too tired to walk, then I was too hungry to walk and then shifu said I have to sit...”

Shifu was silent for a long time. Finally, he laughed: “You’ve become so obedient now.”

“I know that shifu will come back to me.”

I faintly closed my eyes.

“Can we not train like this anymore?”

I didn’t hear if shifu answered or not.

A bit later, I heard many voices. I heard a hoarse voice said: “Shaozhu, you...you were too reckless this time. You abandoned a five- six year old baby girl at a mountain. Getting a cold is nothing, but if she gets eaten by a beast...”

“Isn’t she lying here safe and sound? What are grumbling about? Just do your treatment!”

“I mean, if she gets sick or injured, aren’t you the one who’ll be the most uncomfortable...”

“Who is uncomfortable?! Go, go, I don’t want your treatment anymore, too talkative!”

When I woke up again, I was lying on shifu’s bed. Shifu was sitting with a lifeless face next o me. Seeing that I’ve woken, he pressed his hand on my forehead. He was silent for a long time and then took his hand back. He turned his head and said: “Really...really useless! Lying in bed for three days just because of a little cold. Hmpf...”

I still didn’t understand what he meant, but since shifu is unhappy, it must be because of something I did wrong. I grabbed shifu’s hand, afraid that he’ll turn away and leave like that day.

“Shifu, I’m sorry.”



“What do you know.....”

He didn't finish speaking, gritted his teeth and turned his head again to not look at me.

“Your body is too weak. After you get better, learn some basic martial arts first with the others. Later, if you can climb the mountain on your own, then we'll go practice there.”

After saying that, he shook his hand. I still hold his hand tightly, not letting go. Shifu got a little angry: “Why are you grabbing my hand?”

“Shifu, don't throw me away. Don't let me be alone, cold and hungry.”

His expression turned strange. His mouth moved, but after a while did he say something: “Alright, I'll not let you be alone again.”

He paused, turned unwillingly around to pinch my face: “Don't you dare to put that pathetic look again. Don't you dare to sell that shameful act again.”

Shifu's pinch was too hard. Tears dripped down from pain. I was really frustrated. I don't know what I did wrong to let shifu get so angry.

“Shifu...”

The hand grabbing me loosened. Shifu seemed really tired and muttered to himself: “If you were like this in the netherworld and in heaven...I wouldn't have the heart to whip you.”

He kicked the bed in extreme frustration, gritted his teeth and said: “But! But...when I could just bully you.....you must be acting, you are acting, aren't you?!”

After that day, I was really afraid that shifu will leave me again on the mountain. So I trained really hard with the people of Shengling sect. Learning what shifu called “basic martial arts”. I can finally climb the mountain when I was eight.

After that, I and shifu settled down on the Fengxueshan manor. He didn't teach me anything else. He just gave me a sword and told me some formulas, I couldn't even memorize.

Shifu resented me for being stupid; while he comforted himself by saying that I was still young. But in a blink of eye five years have passed. I'm thirteen and shifu is sixteen. He patted my shoulder and finally admitted: "Drinking too much soup of oblivion has let you become stupid..."

I couldn't make out from the tone of his voice if he's happy or unhappy, while saying those words. But he always says things I don't understand. I'm used to it.

Today is the day to go down the mountain, to Shengling sect, to take food. I heard something I'm really puzzled about. I didn't have the nerve to ask then, but now it's only shifu and me. I asked heartily: "Shifu, are we *harmoniouslycultivating*<sup>[1]</sup> together?"

At that moment shifu was drinking tea. Hearing my question, he spouted his tea. He raised his head and looked at me. His ears were inexplicable red.

"Where did you hear that?"

"Today when we went to pack things to eat, there were a bunch of people together, saying that the reason we two always stay at the manor, is because we're harmoniously cultivating every day, every night, without pause and without rest."

Shifu's mouth moved. He repeated the eight words "every day, every night, without pause, without rest" twice. He pressed his hand on his forehead and rubbed it.

"There's enough spiritual power at the top of this mountain. We're just doing an ordinary cultivation. No, you're too stupid to practice cultivation. I'm the only one absorbing the spiritual power, filling my body."

"This isn't right, ah..."

I felt pity, scratched my head and said: "Shifu, I heard them say that, that "harmonious cultivation" is a really good method to improve one's power. It's like no other; simple, convenient and the effect is really good. Should we give it a try?"

Shifu put his cup lightly on the table. While walking out he said: "This method isn't suited for us. I've got something to do down the mountain. You go memorize the things I've taught you two months ago."

"O."

Later I heard that the people of the sect were severely beaten that day...

That day I also met a demon. I can see some things that ordinary people can't see. After thinking about it, it began after I learned the things shifu taughts me.

Originally I didn't think that the things shifu taught was useful. But today, I think that they're pretty useful, because marching into the manor's backyard with a panicked face, is a big ginseng demon. He was standing next the hens, shivering in the backyard. A naturally fragrant pot of soup appeared in my mind. I stared at him, while my mouth filled with saliva.

I pulled the sword that can kill demons. That pretty ginseng suddenly went on his knees. Kneeling, he walked to me. He knocked his head three times on the floor: "Good girl, good girl, good girl! Help me!"

Those three cheers "good girl" made me feel good. It wouldn't make a difference if I wait a little before making ginseng soup. I pulled him up and asked: "What's the matter?"

Ginseng demon wiped his tears and sobbed: "I...I'm being hunted down by people."

This demon shouldn't know that I can see his true identity.

I nodded my head. My mind was thinking that if there are good things, I need to wait till shifu came back before stewing it to eat. So I answered: "Then you come in and hide for a while. My shifu has great ability. After he came back, he'll surely help you."

In the midnight, shifu came back. I didn't have a chance to explain the situation to him. The moment he entered the hall, he frowned and asked me: "What did you bring here?"

I was about to speak, when the ginseng demon with a face full of grievance came out. He bowed to shifu and said: "I'm *Nanpei*<sup>[2]</sup>. Today I'm sorry to disturb you. I didn't have a choice..."

He didn't finish speaking. Shifu raised an eyebrow, sneered, walked to me and pinched my face.

"Nanpei? You really know how to bring people here, ah."

Shifu pinching my cheeks has become a habit now. I didn't resist, followed his strength and leaned to his ear: "Shifu, ginseng essence, is very nourishing."

I said these words a little too loud. The ginseng demon instantly looked scared, took few mouthfuls of air and sat on the floor.

"You...you...are not a good girl..."

He desperately looked at us.

Shifu raised an eyebrow, rubbed my head and said: "Well, it's rare that you're smart for once, but..."

He glanced at the ginseng demon, curled his lips and said: "Eating vegetation of a thousand years will harm the yin side. You and I are not ordinary people. It's better to let him go."

I was shocked, pulled at shifu's sleeves and said: "The hens in the yard grew too old...they're all old."

"So we can kill the chicken and eat it."

"But! But...!"

I was not willing, but I couldn't find a reason to rebuke shifu. I scratched my head and looked full of resentment at shifu. Shifu didn't look at me. He glanced at the ginseng demon and said: "Go back to where you came from. Otherwise, if this girl eats you, I wouldn't care."

I gritted my teeth. I really want to rush to the ginseng and eat him.

"But...but out there, there are people who want to kill me. They want to make soup of me..."

Ginseng demon sat on the ground. While wiping his tears, he said: "I escaped for so many days, I'm really exhausted."

"Someone dares to dig at my Shengling sect's mountain?"

Shifu's voice raised a decibel. I looked up and saw shifu thought for a moment.

"Alright, this young master (he's referring to himself) just has a too good heart. Nanpei, I allow you to hide in this manor for three days."

I kept staring at the ginseng demon. Shifu covered my eyes and dragged me to his room.

"I said not allowed to eat is not allowed to eat. I'm tired today. Come, massage my shoulder."

I was accustomed to receive orders from shifu, but today I was unhappy.

"Shifu, ginseng soup with chicken is really nourishing."

"En, I'll let the cook give you a basket of ginseng another day. Love how to nourish and you can nourish"

"But that's a ginseng of a thousand years..."

"Eating it will harm the yin in us."

Anyway, he didn't allow me to eat. I was very unhappy and didn't massage shifu's shoulder. I just went back to my room.

The moonlight shone into my room. I toss and turn in my bed, yet I couldn't sleep. My mind is full of images about the ginseng demon and the mother hen together. Suddenly, a light flashed in my mind and I remembered something else. The people of the sect down the mountain said that harmonious cultivation is a quick method to improve one's energy. Shifu said that the method is not suited for us. The ginseng demon became such a fine ginseng essence, he must've some cultivation. Should I just go cultivate harmoniously with him? Every day, every night, without pause and without rest, for about ten days. Then my progress will be quickly and shifu won't say

that I'm stupid anymore!

As I was thinking, I felt that I'm not as stupid as shifu usually says. I'm actually pretty smart.

The next day, I don't know why but shifu went down the mountain again. I searched for a really long time before I found the ginseng demon in the firewood place. The moment he saw me, his face turned pale.

"Don't! Don't eat me! I can do anything! I can do anything!"

After what he said, I immediately laughed.

"Good, good. Let's go cultivate harmoniously!"

The ginseng demon's face froze for a moment. His pale face turned red.

"I I I I I have always been doing clear cultivation (meaning he's a virgin)...I I I I don't know how..."

I frowned. I felt that besides cooking this ginseng, he really isn't useful. He looked up and glanced at me, seeming to know where my thoughts are going. There were cold sweats on his red face.

"How...however, I generally know how it's done, if if ...."

The ginseng began to cry, looking really miserable.

"If you really...need, I'm willing to try with you."

"En, then let's try here first."

Ginseng demon's face turned white: "Here?"

"Should we do it in the hall?"

"The hall?"

He was stunned again.

I angrily asked: "Why don't you say where?"

"This, this is more suitable doing it in a room."

My room is too small. There isn't any place to practice. I thought for a moment. Shifu's room is the best place. It's broad and large and the air is good there. If something went wrong while we practice there, shifu will know when he comes back. So I took him to shifu's room.

I and the ginseng demon sat on shifu's table for a very long time. I don't know how to cultivate so I just glared at ginseng demon. I don't know what he's thinking, but he looks like a madman. He was trembling and his face is red.

He... he must be getting into the right state, right?"

I copied him and began trembling and trying to get my face flushed. Ginseng demon asked: "You...what are you doing?"

"Copying you, ah"

I blinked and asked: "How do we start?"

He panted his trembling finger at shifu's big and soft bed.

"From... from there."

I walked there and sat on the bed.

"And then?"

Ginseng demon also walked to the bed and sat beside me. He lowered his head.

"Then, then, probably, probably undress."

I remembered shifu once told me that I'm not allowed to casually undress in front of others. But then I also remembered that shifu said that I shouldn't treat learning martial arts as a casual thing. I was conflicted, so I obediently took off the coat.

"And then?"

Ginseng demon also took his clothes off, piece by piece. He lowered his head even lower. His voice was barely audible: "Continue... continue to take off."

I obediently took my clothes off. I waited for the ginseng demon to take all his clothes off. Suddenly I saw a stream of blood streaming down ginseng demon's face.

I was shocked and grabbed ginseng demon's face. I saw that he's having a nosebleed.

“Ah! 你走火入魔了<sup>[3]</sup>!”

Suddenly, I heard the door made a “zhiya” sound. Someone opened the door. Shifu stood in the doorway looking at me. His brows rose.

“Shifu,” I yelled. “Something went wrong.”

Shifu walked at a very slow pace into the room and stood by the bedside. He squinted his eyes and looked back and forth at me and the ginseng demon. With a very soft but really scary voice he asked: “Xiao Xiang Zi, what do you want to do on shifu's bed?”

I stared at shifu and seriously answered: “I was going to cultivate harmoniously with ginseng demon.”

Shifu took a slight step back. His expression was really strange. It gave me an unfamiliar feeling.

I wanted to say more, but shifu suddenly grabbed ginseng demon's collar and dragged him to the window. Shifu didn't even bother to open the window. He broke the window and threw the ginseng demon out, like throwing trash.

Very, very far, did the ginseng demon landed on the mountain. I don't know where. Only the trace of ginseng demon's nosebleed on the ground, is proof that he really has been here.

My mouth fell open in surprise and I looked blankly at shifu.

He turned. The cold wind entered the room through the broken window, making his hair messy. He looked at me and said in a tone that he usually used when he jokes with me: “Xiao Xiang Zi, your gut turned fatter. Say carefully again, what were you doing?”

I vaguely saw that something in shifu's eyes isn't the same as usual.



I didn't care about the storm in shifu's heart. I felt that no one in the whole world can understand the pain in my heart. I shook my head, stared at shifu and said tearfully: "You don't let me make chicken soup, you don't let me cultivate harmoniously, you even threw him away! Do you really not want to see me well?!"

I hugged my head and said hoarsely: "You do not hate Xiao Xiang Zi, you're just in love with Nanpei ginseng demon!"

I heard shifu taking deep breaths. The thought that master no longer likes me, felt like the sky was falling on me. It's so heavy that I can't face the reality.

I picked up my clothes and began dressing myself, while walking out.

"Shifu doesn't want me! I also don't want shifu anymore! No ginseng to make soup with chicken, but there still mushroom to make soup with chicken!"

Thirteen years old me, did the greatest thing I've done in my life. I, Xiao Xiang Zi, without dressing properly, ran out of shifu's room, while crying, ran down the mountain, then....ran away from shifu (home).

1. 和合双修 (*hé hé shuāng xiū*): *I couldn't translate it literally, so I decided on harmonious cultivation, but the meaning in that sentence is sexually. I think the people of the sect mean that Chu Kong and Xiao Xiang Zi are having sex day and night without resting. Even if it is the great celestial Chu Kong can't have so much energy (blushing). What are the sect people thinking?*
2. 男配 (*Nán pèi*): *his name means male mate. Poor him, why did it have to be that name.*
3. 你走火入魔了 (*Nǐ zǒuhuǒ rùmóle*): *the literal meaning is fire entered your demons. It's a saying used when someone is obsessed with practicing martial arts that they get side-effects. Most of the time they turn mad. Xiao Xiang Zi thought the ginseng practiced too much and got a nosebleed.*



# Chapter 13

---

The wheels of the carriage are turning. I looked at the man in purple across of me, whose eyes are closed. I grabbed on the wood fence. I shouted to the two people in front of the carriage: "Hey! Stomachache, urgency."

"You sure have many things, brat!"

One stopped the carriage, while the other jumped off it. He opened the door and dragged me out of the carriage.

"Hurry."

He pointed at the bushes on the roadside and said: "After you're resolved your business, come out."

The man was holding the other end of the rope on my body. I looked around. There's no other way, I had to squat on the grass and resolve my business.

The man sitting on the carriage is cursing. He said they should've leaved me on the mountain to survive on my own. Bringing me is too much trouble. Besides selling me, won't bring them much money.

The other one said laughingly: "This is still a success. Although the ginseng of a thousand years ran away, but we've caught something better. Well, this woman, if we can't sell her, we still can bring her back for our own pleasure. The two are idiots. They can't do something serious. Just bear with it for a few days."

I rubbed my empty stomach. I miss shifu more now. Yes, I'm kidnapped. This situation began three days ago, when I left shifu. Originally, I was planning to go to Shengling sect and stay there for two days. Then I'll bring back food and continue to massage shifu's legs and shoulder. But the improper dressed I, met two brawny men on the hillside. It's the two men in front of me. They were carrying an unconscious man in purple, the man that's now asleep in the carriage.

The two brawny men are now discussing where they should go eat and drink. I said with good intention: "The food at Shengling sect is really delicious."

The two men stared at me for a long time. Suddenly one of them raised his hands against me. I didn't win the fight, so I was forced in the carriage again.

We were on the road for three days. The man in purple slept for three days. I missed shifu for three days.

I don't remember ever leaving shifu for so long. Although shifu likes to order me to do things I don't like, like doing the laundry, making his bed and massage his legs and shoulder. He also likes to make fun of me to past time, but shifu is always there when I'm sick. When I wake up from a nightmare shifu is also there. When I'm being bullied, shifu will bully that person back. I scratched my head and thought that compared to ginseng soup or stewing mushroom with chicken, the look shifu have when he rubbed my head and say "Xiao Xiang Zi, good", is more delicious. I really want to go back to shifu, ah...But now how do I go back to shifu....

The carriage seems to be hit by a stone. I was thrown to the other side of the carriage. The man in purple opposite me was also fiercely thrown to the other side of the carriage. His breathing became disorderly. I lifted my head and saw that his eyes opened a little.

"Ah, you've woken up."

Because of my shouting, the two men driving the carriage turned to look at us. They stared alertly at the man in purple before they continue to drive. I understand. The man in purple's hands and feet were chained. His face is pale and his breathing is weak. He looks like someone who is about to die. The two men have nothing to worry about.

The man moved his hands and feet. The chain caused a ringing sound. He seemed to be aware of the situation his in now. His body turned stiff. He raised his head to look at his surroundings. His eyes stared at the backs of the two big men for a while before he turned

to look at me.

“Who are you?”

“I’m Xiao Xiang Zi.”

I kindly reminded him that we’ve been kidnapped.

He wrinkled his brow.

“You look really cheerful.”

“Because now, aside from me, there’s someone else who is uncomfortable. Shifu said that in a bad situation, looking at somebody who’s in a worse situation than you, will let your heart be more balanced.

The man sighed and dropped his head.

“Fool...”

Seeing that he was really depressed, I kindly leaned against his ear and whispered: “Don’t worry, shifu will come and save. I’ll let him save you too.”

The man glanced at me and didn’t speak.

Because I’ve a companion now, I’m not feeling lonely anymore. So I began chatting with him. But this person doesn’t seem to like talking, I told him about my life with shifu and the interesting things we did. He blinked and kept listening, I talked from afternoon to midnight, and still this man hasn’t spoken a word. Suddenly one of the two men in front of us growled: “She! Is the idiot disciple of Shengling sect’s shaozhu, whom he treats like a precious thing!”

I scratched my head and was about to say that shifu doesn’t treat me as a precious thing, when a sudden gust of wind made me close my eyes. When I opened my eyes, at the end of the road there was a dim light. A figure of a person slowly came from the light.

“Ah! Shifu! Shifu,” I yelled.

I was so excited that I crashed against the wooden fence again. I couldn’t wait for shifu to crush this thing and to fly into his arms.

But shifu hasn't yet approached when I heard a "hehehe" cold sneer.

My spine went cold, my hairs stood up. In my memories, shifu rarely sneered like that, but once he sneers like that....

"Very good, very good."

Shifu pulled a whip from his waist. I've never seen him used the whip before. But I don't know why, seeing him with the whip in one hand, laughing with a murderous look, I actually felt at peace.

"Xiaoye<sup>[1]</sup> searched the whole mountain for this person, but she has been abducted by you two."

The whip touched the ground with a "pipa" sound. My body also got startled by the sound.

Shifu said laughingly: "Let xiaoye be busy for a few days without results. Say, how do you want to die? Xiaoye will follow your wishes."

The two looked at each other. One said: "We didn't mean to offend Shengling sect. This lady is shaozhu's disciple; we shall certainly return her to shaozhu."

I looked at the man in purple next to me. He remained silent and quietly observed the situation.

I whispered: "Don't worry, my shifu is not a soft and big hearted person. This two people will certainly get whipped."

The man in purple looked at me for a moment and suddenly said: "If your shifu heard this, you'll also be whipped."

"Shifu will not whip me."

Saying that I remembered that shifu never has used his hands against me. Every time he'll get mad at me. At most he'll pinch my cheeks really hard. Remembering this, I felt that shifu is pretty good. When we go back to the manor, I'll do my best at massaging him.

While I was lost in my own thoughts, shifu said: "Hmpf...I always prefer to get back what was stolen from me, with my own hands."

His body began to move and the two men immediately pulled out their swords.

The first whip was not in the direction of the two people.

I only heard a “pa ”sound. I turned my head and saw the wooden fence being split into pieces. Shifu threw a dagger at my feet and glanced at me with great dislike. He turned around and began fighting with the two men. This two brawny men’s martial arts are surprisingly good. They actually have a draw with shifu.

I immediately picked up the knife and cut the ropes. I turned to the man in purple and said: “I’ll help you cut the chain.”

“Don’t waste your efforts, “he said. “This dark steel, stone chain can’t be cut by an ordinary dagger. Those two men aren’t using ordinary martial arts, but they’re using martial arts which can catch demons. No matter how good your shifu’s martial arts are, fighting with them at the same time is quite laborious. If you’re clever, you should escape now.”

I blinked and stared at the man for a moment.

“My shifu is also not using ordinary martial arts.”

I picked up the dagger and meditated a formula that shifu taught me several months ago. I cut the chain really hard. The chain broke. I put the dagger safely in my clothes and said to the surprised man: “This is also not an ordinary dagger.”

I pulled the man.

“We hide first. After shifu is finished with them, we can come out.”

I was just about to lead this man away when I heard: “That brat wants to abducts our good!”

After yelling that the man left his partner and rushed to me.

I was shocked. My mouth called for shifu. My hands dragged the man and desperately ran into the woods.

I heard shifu yelled: “Where do you want to go, demon catcher?”

The voice is not far away from me. They must be chasing me.

The man in purple ran for a few steps and struggled to breath. He said: "You put...put me down...they will not come after you."

After hearing that, I immediately let go of him. My steps haven't even stopped, when a heavy blow came to my knee. My legs went soft and I embarrassingly fell onto the ground. I looked up and angrily accused the man in purple: "Liar! I let go and they still hit me!"

He opened his mouth, but no sound came out. He was speechless.

My chin was burning with pain. My skin was scraped. I haven't had the time to cry when a shadow grabbed me. I lifted my head and saw the brawny man waving his sword. He wants to cut me into half. I blinked and saw that suddenly a whip was wrapped against his waist. I don't know how much power the person holding the whip used, but he gently moved and the brawny man flew aside like a puppet.

Shifu dressed in full white, handsomely landed in front of me. One hand was holding the whip. With the other he pulled me up. Even if shifu's face was really gloomy, in my eyes, it's beautiful like spring flowers.

I hugged him and rubbed, rubbed a few times against his chest and cried out loud: "Shifu, I was wrong! Huhu...I don't want ginseng soup anymore...huhu...."

Shifu pulled me away, looked at my chin, squeezed my arms and legs and asked in a bad temper: "How many times did they beat you?!"

I sniffed: "I didn't count..."

Shifu's face turned even darker: "Have you beat them back?"

"Couldn't win..."

"Stupid brat!"

Shifu gritted his teeth. He glared angrily at the two brawny men standing together.



Full of hate he said: "You dare to want to kill the pig I raised..."

The brawny man who was thrown aside by shifu said: "We already apologized to you and are willing to give the girl back to you. In the past few days we haven't abused her. Why are you making things difficult for us?"

Shifu sneered and pulled me behind him. Quite furious he said: Do I need a reason to make things difficult for you?"

"Shengling sect must not go too far! We two only want the good back..."

"Xiaoye doesn't want to return it."

Shifu picked up his whip and said arrogantly: "You come and steal it, ah."

Seeing that shifu and the two men are about to fight again, I scratched my head and went to sit beside the man in purple.

"You see, my shifu is really narrow minded."

The man in purple was silent for a moment and said: "Your shifu isn't an ordinary human."

I nodded: "En, his more narrow minded than the average people... but shifu's always tolerant with me."

I turned and looked at the man in purple.

"Ah, I still don't know your name."

He was silent for a moment and said: "My name is Zihui."

I was about to friendly introduce myself to him when suddenly a glimmer of light flashed before my eyes. Zihui's face turned pale. He pushed me to the ground and shouted: "Hidden weapon! Be careful!"

I haven't realized the situation yet, when three needles flew in our direction. At that point it was too late to hide. I was in a trance. Suddenly a black whip was before us. Even though the whip is rough, but it stopped the needles.

I was about to shout “almighty shifu”, when I saw that the two brawny man take advantage of shifu’s distraction. One person fight with shifu and the other raised his sword to cut shifu. I was startled, unable to make a sound and just kept staring at them...

“Don’t bully my shifu!”

---

### Notes

1. 小爷 (Xiǎo yé): the meaning is little master. This is what Chu Kong used to call himself. If it used by oneself, it has an arrogant meaning. But it’s also used by servants of the noble class.

# Chapter 14

---

In a split of moment shifu made a slight turn. The sword landed on his left shoulder. Blood flowed out. Shifu didn't seem to feel the slightest pain. His body sank. I do not know what force he used. He flew past the men and gently stroked them. They shuddered, instantly collapsed, blood flowed out of their mouths and they fainted.

Zihui, who was leaning on me, went stiff. I didn't care if he went stiff or not, pushed him aside and ran to shifu. Seeing shifu's wound on his shoulder, I didn't know what to do or what to say.

"Scared?"

Although shifu was pale, his voice was no different from usual.

"Next time, if you dare to run around."

He turned and left. He must have some anger he hasn't vent yet.

I grabbed his right hand and asked in fear: "Shifu...wound, does it hurts..."

"I would not die,"he coldly said. "Hmpf, now you see me as your shifu? I didn't let you eat ginseng chicken soup. You ran away to search for mushroom to stew with chicken. Did you find any?"

I obediently admit my fault: "Shifu, I was wrong. I'll never run away again."

I was scared. My voice couldn't help but shake. "Don't be angry...Do not not want me."

Hearing this, shifu turned around to look at me. His voice sounded a little strange: "Oh, who was the one who shouted she doesn't want shifu anymore."

"I was wrong."

"Well, since shifu is a narrow minded person, I'll not accept your

apology.”

“I was wrong...”

This is the only sentence that kept repeating in my heart, like a cold wind whistling in my heart. I thought that this time shifu really doesn't want me anymore. I lifted my head and coldly looked at him. Shifu also looked at me. After a while he blinked, looking somewhat startled and agitated, he said: “Hey!”

He turned and said a little dumbfounding: “Stupid Xiang Zi, I was playing with you. There's nothing to cry about.”

Big tears kept rolling out of my eyes uncontrollably. Shifu's figure in my eyes turned blurry. I grabbed his hand tightly. Afraid that when I let it go, he'll run away and leave me.

“Don't...don't not want me...”

Shifu sighed loudly: “You're really stupid.”

“You can't dislike me.”

I couldn't stop sobbing.

“I don't dislike you!”

He impatiently said those words and was silent for a long time. I only kept sobbing. Suddenly shifu pulled out his right hand. My heart was empty. But in the next instant, suddenly my palm felt warm. Shifu was holding my hand like he used to when we were kids and was climbing the mountain.

He wiped my tears and bent his lips in frustration: “Forget it, let's go back to Fengxueshan manor.”

Obviously his tone was that of disdain, but to me shifu's voice felt warm like his palm.

“Shifu...wound, hurt.”

“Wound of the flesh. It just looks scary.”

Shifu, holding my hand and walked two steps. I stopped and pointed

at Zihui, who was sitting on the side and said: "Shifu...there's one more."

Shifu's body stiffened. He turned and looked at Zihui from head to toe. He wrinkled his eyebrows and looked at me.

"Oh, you really did find chicken mushroom stew. Is he a chicken essence or a mushroom essence?"

I grabbed shifu's hand really hard and swore: "I don't want any essence! I only want shifu!"

Seeing me with this expression on my face, shifu hesitated and looked away. He grunted softly: "It's good that you know."

At that moment, silent Zihui suddenly said: "Little... a Xiang lady, go back with your shifu. I'm not really hurt."

I blinked and looked at him. I felt that he says those words with his pale face, really have no persuasive power.

Leaving such a weak person alone in the woods. Besides, we can say that we depended on each other...

I was still not finished thinking, when shifu mercilessly pulled me and walked away.

"Stone essence of ten thousand years, this brat cultivation is much higher than yours. There's no need for you to worry about her."

"Is it higher than shifu's?"

Shifu was silent for a while. Suddenly he squeezed my face really hard.

"If it wasn't for you, would I be in this state now?!"

Shifu's squeeze was really painful. I blinked to let my tears not fall out. Otherwise, if shifu can't vent his anger, he'll abandon me again...

The hand that was squeezing me slowly released. Shifu sighed: "Forget it...you don't know anything."

I went back with shifu to Fengxueshan manor.

For several months, shifu used the excuse that his shoulder was injured, to order me to do all sort of things. Even turning the page of his books is my job now. Almost all my time I was under shifu's eyelids (she was always in his sight).

But shifu looked really comfortable. I take it as my atonement and really seriously took care of him.

On a day in the afternoon, shifu was taking a nap. I was sitting on a stool beside the bed, fanning him. While I was fanning, something fell on the floor with a "dongdong" sound.

I blinked and hazily looked. It's a thumb-sized crystal clear stone. I picked it up. I looked at it through the sunlight. I saw a speckled purple light around it. It's really beautiful.

"Another day when we go down the mountain, I'll let the craftsmen make a ring out of it. It'll certainly look beautiful on shifu."

After I said those words, I don't know why my hand shook. The stone fell on the ground and rolled over to I don't know where. I bent down to look for it, when shifu dissatisfied hummed twice: "Xiao Xiang Zi! Fan, don't be lazy."

I was busy fanning shifu. I thought that I'll come back when it's empty here. But no matter how I searched I couldn't find the stone. Over time I've forgotten about it.

It's another winter. Fengxueshan's snow is now knee deep. Shifu seems to hate the snow since the day he was born. Once it's windy and snowy outside, no matter what important things he has to do, he'll sit by the fire in the house and read books all day.

Charcoal, incense and meals. All of these I need to prepare for him.

This day after I had a meal with shifu, I did the dishes and went to clean the yard. I took the broom, swept a few times, sat on the snow and then dozed off.

Yesterday shifu taught me a new formula. I didn't memorize it. He

trained me for most of the night. Today I needed to wake up early. I'm really sleepy. Drowsily lying on the snow, I fell asleep.

In my dreams a man in purple called my name: "A Xiang lady, a Xiang lady."

I resent him for breaking my beautiful dream. I muttered a few words and didn't want to bother with him. But he called and called. At last he said with a smile in his voice: "If a Xiang lady still don't wake up, you're shifu will beat your butt."

The word "shifu" stung my nerves. I opened my eyes just in time to see shifu standing in front of me, holding a large banner with bamboo printing on it. He frowned and looked at me with tension: "Get up, you're not allowed to sleep on the snow."

Shifu rarely spoke with me with such a serious tone. I was scared and surprised for a moment, forgetting to react. Shifu was too lazy to say it for a second time. He pulled me up from the snow.

"If you're tired, go sleep in your room."

After he finished talking, he walked away. With the wind blowing, I wasn't sure if it was an illusion or that he really said these words: "Someone closed her eyes in the snow. It never opened again."

I couldn't understand this sentence. Just as I couldn't understand why shifu occasionally looked at me in trance. He seemed to be looking at me, but he also seemed to be looking at another person. Sometime he'll even whisper: "Fucking hell... the more she grows, the more she looks like her!"

From when I was little, shifu always said some sentences I don't understand. I don't even bother to care about it anymore. Actually, since then, I often saw a man in purple in my dreams. He always stood in the darkness, looking at me and calling me...a Xiang lady.

In the beginning I didn't dare to speak to him. After seeing him for a few times, I picked up my courage and asked him: "Who are you?"

He answered lightly: "The person of your dreams."

The next day I woke up and run to ask shifu: "What is the person of your dreams?"

Shifu yawned on his bed. He lazily answered me: "Ghost, demons. Monsters that don't even live in this world. The demons that make your mind a mess, causing you to think about the times you were together. Well...which do you think fit? Which is the person of your dreams?"

I scratched my head. I felt that none fitted.

After some days, I took advantage of when we went to Shengling sect to gather food. I asked the people of Shengling sect the same question. They all gave me strange answers. None was same.

Hujiao uncle patted my head, looked at me comfortingly and said: "Xiao Xiang Zi has grown up."

Tangzhu sister stared at me like a scholar and told me: "Heart and soul requested for a beautiful dream of the other half."

The butcher told me: "Ah, you're already old enough to have spring dreams! Well, when you search for a husband, find someone who looks like the person of your dreams."

After saying that the butcher touched his chin, thought for a moment and whispered to himself: "Shiiiiii....it won't be good if shaozhu heard my words..."

I blinked for a moment and then asked: "What is a husband good for?"

"What is a husband good for....,"the butcher laughed. "Earning money for the family let the wife live a good life!"

My heart was happy, my eyes glinted. I asked: "Then can I find a husband and be his wife?"

This way, I can let husband do all the work shifu ordered me to do: Doing the laundries, making shifu's bed and massaging shifu. I finally can enjoy a better life!

I don't know why after I asked that question, the butcher looked



really awkward. He scratched his head and said: "It's not that you can't...but...you have to ask your shifu first."

One more person to serve shifu. Shifu will certainly be happy. There's nothing bad about it. Shifu will surely agree.

I happily carried the food back to Fengxueshan manor. After we finished dinner, seeing that shifu was in a good mood today, I excitedly asked: "Shifu, do you want one more person to serve you?"

Shifu drank a gulp of tea, turned and looked at me for a moment.

"One stupid disciple is enough. I don't want one more to cause me more headache."

"It's not a disciple," I said. "I'll find a husband for myself. Then bring him back. Together we'll serve shifu. What do you think?"

I counted on my fingers. One, two, three, four, five; I counted the benefits of a husband.

"When I do the dishes, he'll sweep the floor. When I make the fire, he'll cut the firewood. When I do the laundry...well, he'll do the laundry with me. The work will be certainly done faster and better."

I turned and looked at shifu with a face full of hope.

"Shifu, isn't that really beautiful?"

Shifu turned the cup quietly, without speaking a word.

He must not have heard me. So I asked in a louder voice: "Shifu, what do you say about me looking for a husband?"

With a "pa" sound, the cup in shifu hand broke. The tea dropped on his body. I was shocked and heard shifu laughed out loud.

"Good, this is excellent. One more person coming to serve me. How is that not good?!"

As he was saying that, his expression was somewhat insane. I wanted to say "shifu, your expression doesn't match your words." But before I could say something, shifu stood in front of me and

fiercely pinched my face again and again.

“Really great courage, huh? Ah, Xiao Xiang Zi, already thinking to look for help, together dealing with me.”

“Serving you,” I corrected him. But apparently shifu didn’t listen.

“Good, mortal women will get married after they get the hairpin. There’s still one more year. If you find the right person after a year, then you go and marry him.”

Shifu almost stared at me with his nostrils.

“If that time comes and no one wants to marry you, you can’t come crying to me and complain.”

I scratched my head and said very puzzled: “Shifu, you don’t want me to look for a husband, I won’t look for one. Don’t be angry.”

I don’t know how these words poked at shifu’s nerves. His body went stiff. He loosened his hand, turned and said: “Hmpf, who cares if you look or not, it’s just...it’s just that you’re my disciple. If at that time no one marries you, I’ll lose face!”

Shifu is really someone who cares about face. I sighed and said: “Shifu, you don’t need to worry. I already have a target. I’ll do my best.”

I picked up the dishes and went out of the room. Shifu was frozen in the room. Until when I was going to go around the corner, did shifu’s dark voice come from behind: “Hey.”

His shout made me stop. It took a moment before he continued: “Who is it that you fancy?”

I looked at the sky and thought for a moment before I replied: “The person of my dreams.”

After I turned around the corner, I heard the sound of the table being kicked.

Shifu began practicing after a meal...really hard working, ah.

I also have to work hard on finding a husband. Then I can help shifu

and cause him less trouble.

Since then shifu ordered me to do more and more things. Even while sleeping, I need to sleep next to his bed on the floor.

Every time, we went to Shengling sect to gather food, shifu will walk behind me leisurely. Initially, everyone treated me as they do usually, but gradually the males don't speak to me anymore. Not long after, even the butcher doesn't speak to me anymore. So after some time, I was a little unhappy. I felt that they probably dislike me because I did something wrong. Whenever shifu saw me unhappy, his face will turn darker. Occasionally I could hear him say to himself: "Damn it, he really is someone from Shengling sect..."

# Chapter 15

---

It's the dream again. The silent man in purple looked at me quietly from a dark place. I also looked at him for a long time. Finally, I melancholy, said: "Don't look for me anymore. Even though you're the person of my dreams, I can take you to reality to be my husband."

Tomorrow is the day that I'll get my hairpin. Shifu let the people of Shengling sect organize a big feast for me to choose a husband. His face looks darker each approaching day. Although I don't know the reason, but I can see that shifu doesn't like me looking for a husband. So I was very puzzled. If he doesn't like it, I can just stop looking for a husband. Why did he have to spend time organizing a feast for me to choose a husband and make himself angry?

I sighed and told the man in purple: "My shifu is a weirdo. Although he organized a feast for me to choose a husband, he isn't happy that I'm choosing a husband. So even though I really want a husband, I still won't choose. Beside you always only appear in my dreams. You can't come to the feast. Well...so I thought for a moment and came to the conclusion that you shouldn't appear in my dreams anymore and making me wish for a better life. I'll be disappointed if I can't live a better life later."

The man in purple listened to my words. I don't know why he laughed.

"Don't worry, I'll do my best to make you live a good life. What do you think?"

My eyes lit up, but thinking about shifu's sullen face, I shook my head: "If I've a good life, shifu will be unhappy...forget it, it's best if I just stay beside shifu."

The man in purple was silent for a very long time.

"A Xiang lady, do you like your shifu very much?"

“Very much,” I nodded. “Shifu eats meat, I also eat meat. Shifu is happy, I’m also happy.”

The man in purple didn’t speak again. In my ears I can hear the faint sound of shifu’s voice calling for me. It’s presumably already dawn. I waved at the man in purple and said: “I’m going. Let’s don’t meet each other anymore.”

I opened my eyes and saw that the sun just came up. My heart doesn’t understand where shifu’s energy comes from. He got up even earlier than me. My vision got clearer. I saw shifu standing at my bedside, looking at me with squinted eyes.

“What did you see in your dream? Your mouth was muttering.”

“Well,” I said while rubbing my eyes. “I was saying goodbye to the person of my dreams...”

I didn’t finish talking when I felt something heavy on my body. It was shifu who threw my clothes on the bed with a really bad temper. His face was really dark. He gritted his teeth and breathed for a long time before he said: “Today, when you wake up, you can see him. There’s no need to also be so attached to each other in your dreams!”

I was about to explain that in the future I couldn’t see him anymore, but shifu left the room and just left these angry sentences: “After changing into this dress, come out. Today’s choosing a husband feast will be held at Shengling sect. We’ll go down the mountain together.”

Ai...shifu is making it difficult for himself again.

The clothe that shifu gave me was white. I looked in the bronze mirror. This dress felt like the clothes Shenling sect wore when someone has died. But it’s not ugly. I lifted the skirt and ran out to look for shifu.

When shifu saw me, he hesitated and wrinkled his brows.

“You’re not allowed to laugh! Don’t pretend to be charming!”

I obediently closed my mouth.

He frowned.

“Don’t pretend to be mature.”

I felt really wronged: “I’m not pretending.”

“Shut up! You’re not allowed to make a pitiful expression!”

I closed my mouth and looked at him bewildered.

Shifu covered his face and gave a long sigh.

“Forget it...Let’s go down.”

I walked behind shifu. I only heard shifu in front of me saying to himself: “Fucking hell, what’s wrong with me?! What’s wrong with me?! It’s all that person of her dreams fault. Don’t let me know who you are today. See how I’ll deal with you. Deal with you!”

I was behind shifu. I gently pulled his clothes.

“Shifu, if you’re really upset, we shouldn’t go down today. I’ll never mention the words “the person of my dreams” again in front of you.”

Shifu stopped in his tracks. I looked up at him. There was a slightly surprised expression on shifu’s face. He seemed like he didn’t want me to see his expression. He turned around really fast. Without a word, he continued walking. I grabbed his clothes and followed him from behind, like a small tail....

Suddenly a warm hand grabbed my hand that was pulling at his clothes. I heard the sound of shifu’s voice through the cold air.

“I didn’t...mean to get mad at you.”

Holding my hand, he walked down the path to go to Shengling sect.

“You don’t need to be afraid.”

I stared at shifu’s hand. My heart eased down.

Shengling sect has been decorated. When shifu walked in holding my hand, the females came and congratulated me. Passing the

yard, I saw a man cleaning the leaves. My footsteps stopped.

“Husband...”

So nice, all the menial works at Shengling sect are done by men. It would be so nice if Fengxueshan manor also has a man...

Of course, shifu is in another league. He's more superior than men and women.

When I stopped, shifu also stopped. I looked back at shifu. I don't know why his face is dark again. I blinked. I don't understand where shifu's temper came from.

Shifu took me straight to Shengling sect's second floor. There was a balcony on the second floor, where you can see what happens below. On weekdays, the people of Shengling sect will train below the balcony. Today, it's cleared and used for me to pick my husband.

I stood with shifu on the balcony. After a while the males stood in a line below the balcony. Even the butcher stood in the line with a face full of cold sweat. Everyone seemed unwilling. They seemed like they have a stomach ache. It did so much pain that they couldn't even lift their heads. I looked below and only saw the black of their hairs.

Someone brought a chair for shifu. He sat down. With a cup of tea in his hand, without looking around, he coldly said: “Well, Xiao Xiang Zi, today has finally come. Pick. Where's that person of your dreams?”

I glanced around and said to shifu: “Shifu...you're upset because I'm choosing. I won't choose anymore.”

Shifu squinted his eyes and smiled: “Feeling embarrassed to pick? Alright, then you guys have to apply yourself.”

He said to the males below: “This discipline that I raised for ten years, who wants her?”

The heads of the males below, hanged even lower. No one spoke a word.

I blinked for a moment and thought that after so many years,

actually no men is willing to follow me back and be my husband. I can't help but sigh sadly. Hearing me sigh, shifu made an "hmpf" sound. He stared at me for a while and then laughed.

"Well, are you guys also embarrassed?"

Shifu took a red ball from the people behind us.

"Then, how about we let the ball decide? Who it hits, it'll be for him. Xiao Xiang Zi, you need to throw at the one you like. (Can't believe Chu Kong will go this far just because he wants to know who's that person).

Shifu gave me the red ball. I held it in my hand and pondered for a while. With a little force, I threw it back at shifu in his lap. Shifu went stiff. He looked blankly at the ball. I stared at shifu and said: "I think that the one I like the most is still shifu."

The audience went silent for a while. Then the sound of their quick breathings can be heard. A "pu" sound came from the people laughing behind us. And shifu's face slowly turned red in this increasing noisy environment.

"Out, out, outrageous!"

Shifu abruptly stood up and pinched my cheek.

"Your guts turned fat. You dare to provoke Xiaoye!"

"It fell, it fell"

I saw how the red ball fell to the ground, rolled to the edge of the balcony and fell onto the ground below. The males scattered like birds. The red ball bounced on the ground and rolled to the middle. By this time, there are no people within three meters of it.

"Ah..."

I rubbed my eyes a little disappointed.

"So everyone is afraid to be my husband ah. Everyone is disgusted because I'm stupid."

The hand pinching my cheek, stiffened. Shifu said: "Who dares?!"



He stopped, coughed and said: "That's not the reason."

I lifted my head and looked at shifu.

"Then why nobody wants to be my husband?" (Because they're afraid of cutie Chu Kong, ah)

Shifu opened his mouth. Before he could speak a familiar voice came from outside. It's the voice of the man in purple, who often appears in my dreams.

"A Xiang lady, I'm willing."

I turned to look and saw a purple tornado. He jumped over the crowd and walked slowly to the red ball. A pair of white hands picked up the ball on the ground. He patted the dust from the ball, looked at me and smiled: "I'll do my best to let you have a good life."

"The person of my dreams?" I whispered. I couldn't believe that he actually appeared in real life. In my dreams I never saw his face. Now I can see it clearly. I suddenly remembered. Isn't he the one who was kidnapped together with me by the demon catchers about a year ago?!

"Zihui, "I yelled a little surprised.

That time I left with shifu. Later, I didn't know if he lived or died. Now I can see that he lived, I was happy.

"Oh, the person of your dreams," shifu suddenly said with a strange tone. My heart inexplicably trembled. Carefully, I turned around and glanced at shifu. I can only saw an angle of his lips laughing in a sinister and penetrating way.

"Hehehehe, so this was it, so this was it. I calculated everyone, in the end it was someone outside Shengling sect, hehe."

Shifu looked at me with slanted eyes. The anger in his eyes made my legs shaking. He pinched my face and said laughingly: "Amazing, Xiao Xiang Zi. In the past year, where did you and this fellow hook up without anyone knowing?"

Those crazy look in the pair of shifu's eyes made me a little afraid.

My voice shook a little when I honestly answered: "On my bed, when is time to sleep."

The hand pinching my face, loosened. Shifu's expression turned empty.

"You...You two, *already turned the uncooked rice into cooked rice*<sup>[1]</sup>."

"No rice and no cooked rice. I only saw him in my dreams. Occasionally we'll talk," I quickly explained.

"I only cooked rice for shifu. I didn't cook for other people. Shifu don't be angry."

Although I don't know what's wrong with cooking rice for other people, but shifu's temper is inexplicable. I'll just concede a little.

After hearing my words, shifu turned around. His face was even darker.

"The technique of entering one's dream."

Shifu looked at Zihui, who was below the balcony and said coldly: "Brother, you really did make efforts for this stupid disciple of mine!"

"After we said our goodbyes a year ago, I missed a Xiang lady day and night."

Zihui's cheeks were slightly red. He said in a low voice: "I thought left and right and decided that this is the only way that's not offensive. Although entering one's dream is risky, but for a Xiang lady, everything is worth it."

My eyes lit up. The last sentence completely took my mind. I saw that in the future, there'll be a figure of a man in Fengxueshan manor, running here and there, doing all the chores.

I looked at Zihui with dreamy eyes, full of hope.

The wood beneath shifu's leg made a "ge la ge la" sound. The sound is like something being crushed.

Suddenly shifu pulled me. The sight in front of me turned black. It's shifu's back. He blocked my view. I could hear shifu saying with a stuffy voice: "Let that thought of yours die, Xiao Xiang Zi will not marry someone outside Shengling sect. Go back where you came from."

After saying that, shifu dragged me inside.

I looked at Zihui with some dismay. I heard him yell: "Shifu, you're a bit autocratic. A Xiang lady already got the hairpin and no one in Shengling sect wants to marry a Xiang lady. Shifu using such a justification to let a Xiang lady stay at your side. Have you considered that it'll delay a Xiang lady's big moment in life?"

Shifu's footsteps stopped. He took a deep breath. I don't know what he's suppressing. Zihui's voice continued: "I came with a true heart to ask for a Xiang lady's wishes. Even if shifu doesn't want to see me, shifu needs to ask a Xiang lady for her opinion. After all, she's only your disciple. You can't decide her whole life."

Shifu's grip on my hand is painful. I endured it, but couldn't endure it anymore. I whispered: "Shifu...grip is painful."

The people below are scarred. Inside there still some servants. But they seem like the dead. Even the sound of their breathing couldn't be heard.

Shifu was silent for a long time. In the end he let go of my hand. He turned around and looked at me with dark eyes full of emotions I don't know.

"Xiao Xiang Zi, say, this man called Zihui, wants or doesn't want?"

"I..."

I looked awkwardly at shifu. Finally I shook my head and said: "Shifu doesn't want me to want, so I don't want."

I stared at my toes for a long time and still didn't hear shifu say anything.

Curiously, I looked up at shifu. Only to find him frowning. His lips was

in a straight line and with his pale face, it seemed like he received a heavy blow.

“Shifu...”

“I ask you, do you want to marry him?”

“Shifu doesn’t want me to marry, I don’t marry.”

“It’s not about my wishes, it’s about yours.”

Shifu seemed obsessed. He stared at me and asked: “Do you want to marry?”

Looking at shifu’s dark face, I this feeling of wanting to hold his hand. I want to say “shifu, don’t make things more difficult for yourself, alright....”

But before I could open my mouth, shifu nodded and said: “Good, you want, he’s yours.”

He left and only left these cold words: “Come back yourself with him to Fengxueshan manor.”

I chased after him. Just when I was on the first floor, the moment shifu saw Zihui, who was coming from the outside, his angry mood raised to another level and he yelled at me: “Don’t follow me!”

I stopped and stood there in the hall, without moving. But my heart couldn’t help but feel frightened. Shifu is angry, he wants to leave me.

“A Xiang lady.”

Zihui and shifu passed each other. He walked to me. His cheeks were still red.

“Forgive me, last night, hearing you say that, I was a little impatient. Today I came in a rush. A Xiang lady, don’t be angry.”

My eyes were fixed on shifu’s back, who was leaving. Zihui’s word came in from the left ear and went out from the right ear.

“A Xiang lady?”

A hand waved in front of my face. I blinked and my eyes finally looked at Zihui's face.

I said with dissatisfaction: "We agreed on not meeting anymore."

"Zihui was stunned for a moment.

"Sorry, but I couldn't suppress myself. I thought that I still have to come and try..."

I was happy that there someone so willing to be my husband, but shifu doesn't want...

My head felt warm. It's Zihui touching my head. He said: "Shifu doesn't want now must be because he's not assured leave you in my hands. In the future, if we spend more time together, I believe that he'll see my true heart. It'll all be alright."

I thought for a while and felt that his words are reasonable. My heart slowly felt better.

I saw his hand holding the red ball. I pointed at it and said: "This is for shifu, give it to me."

The hand on my head stiffened. I looked up and saw Zihui's warm smile: "Alright, give to shifu."

I took the red ball and said to Zihui: "I'll take you back to Fenxueshan manor. Today, you can clean the yard first."

".....Alright, clean the yard."

---

## Notes

1. 都已经把生米做成熟饭了 (dōu yǐjīng bǎ shēng mǐ zuò chéngshú fànle): Chu Kong meant that they already slept together.

# Chapter 16

---

That night, shifu didn't come back to Fengxueshan manor. For most of the night, I sat at the manor's front door, while holding my knee. The cold mountain air felt like needles pricking my bones. My heart also turned cold.

The stars in the sky flew above my head. I stared blankly at the road outside of the manor, hoping that shifu will appear inadvertently, pinching my cheeks and yelling at me to go back in the manor to sleep.

But shifu didn't appear. The one that appeared was Zihui. He put a coat on me.

"Go back to sleep, I'll look out. When your shifu comes back, I'll go wake you up."

I stubbornly shook my head. Zihui no longer tried to persuade me. He sat down next to me. Together we stared at the long road before us.

"Zihui, why do you want to be my husband?"

Since there's nothing else to do, I opened my mouth and said: "Even though I and the people of Shenling sect know each other so well, still no one wanted to marry me."

"En, it's probably because I like you more than I fear your shifu."

"Why do you like me?"

Zihui paused for a moment and then said: "Guess."

"I'm stupid, I can't guess it."

I put my head on my knees. I really want to sleep. Slowly my eyelids turned heavy.

I honestly said: "I always felt that there's something strange in your eyes."

“Ah?”

The person beside me seemed somewhat agitated.

“Where is it strange?”

“I don’t know, but I think...in your heart you are probably not willing to be my husband.”

I closed my eyes. My head turned to a side, resting on a thick shoulder.

“Actually...if you are not willing, we can cancel it....I don’t force you.”

The person beside me didn’t say anything and I slowly fell into sleep.

*(Actually, I felt that Xiao Xiang Zi isn’t so stupid here. She saw right through Zihui. She’s just simple-minded)*

The next morning, I heard a “sha sha” sound of someone cleaning the floor. Confused, I rubbed my eyes. I took a closer look. It’s Zihui cleaning the stair made of stone, with a broom.

The air has a strange smell. I vaguely remembered the butcher once told me that this smell is called wine. It’s a wonderful thing, but the butcher never lets me touch it. He said that when a girl drink it, she’ll become crazy. Now, I’m a little stupid, but I’m still rational. If I touch that kind of thing and become silly and crazy, by that time shifu will really not want me anymore. So I’ve been keeping that kind of thing far away from me. In Fengxueshan there’s also no wine. I scratched my head and asked: “Zihui, how come wine has been spilled on the ground?”

Zihui looked at me, smiled and said: “Shifu just came back. Seeing us sitting at the front door, he slipped. A bit of the wine spilled out of the jar in his hand.”

“Shifu is back!”

My ears only heard those words. The others have become smoke.

“Where is he?”

“Now he must be in his room.....”

Not listening to till he finished speaking, I quickly stood up and wanted to run inside the manor. Curling my legs the whole night, stood up too quickly, my legs went numb. My eyes went black and I fell onto the ground. My nose hit the ground really hard. A flow of nosebleed dirtied the ground. My head turned dizzily, my eyes were blurry. I only heard Zihui's panic voice yelling: “A Xiang lady, a Xiang lady!”

“All is alright.”

I strongly stood up and wiped my face. Seeing the nosebleed on my hand, I was a little scared. I couldn't keep standing by myself. Zihui, who was holding me, fell on top of me. He used his sleeve to wipe my face for me. Not even carrying that it was dirty, he also wiped my nose.

“Where else does it still hurt?”

I looked up and said with a muffled voice: “Nowhere else, I'm thick-skinned.”

Zihui looked at me for a while. Suddenly he shook his head and laughed out loud.

“Really.....really dumb.”

This sentence is truthful. I couldn't deny it, so I looked up at the sky in silence.

Zihui helped me stood up, then his hand slightly loosened. He leaned in and carefully took a look at my face.

“En, it doesn't flow anymore.”

With his arm on my shoulder, he whispered: “Do you want to go inside?”

I glanced at his hand on my shoulder. A little uncomfortable, I twisted.

“Yes, I need to go to shifu first.”



While saying that, I ran for two steps. I thought for a moment, looked back at Zihui and said: "Thank you, husband!"

Zihui was a little startled. He didn't even come back to his senses, when I turned and ran inside to go look for shifu.

I looked everywhere in the manor and still didn't even see shifu's shadow. I scratched my head and said to myself: "Zihui lied to me. Shifu obviously hasn't come back."

Those words were just out of my mouth, when a jug fell from above and hit the ground with a "pa" sound. It broke on the ground. The smell coming from it is the smell of wine.

I sniffed. It's the same smell as the one at the front door.

I took a few steps back and lifted my head. I saw shifu sitting on the roof tiles, carrying a jug and staring at me blankly. I happily waved at him. I looked around. I moved the ladder on the corner, to where shifu is. With shaking legs I climbed.

"Shifu! Why are you here?"

Shifu answered me in a voice full of weird emotions: "Standing high, seeing far."

I walked carefully to shifu's side and sat beside him. I looked at him for a while and saw that he's isn't angry, did I asked: "Why didn't shifu come back last night?"

He didn't even look at me and said while looking in the distance: "Isn't it good that I didn't come back? How are you getting along with that husband?"

Hearing him asking that, I nodded.

"Good, very good."

I held out my hand and was prepared to tell him everything I did with Zihui. I haven't even opened my mouth, when shifu suddenly pulled me and shoved me. I lay on the roof. Shifu was lying on top of me, blocking all my sights.

A few roof tiles fell off and broke on the ground.

I blinked and looked at shifu's somewhat reddish eyes. He smelled of wine. I was little panicked.

"Shifu, what's the matter?.....Didn't they say that only if a girl drinks it, she'll become crazy?!"

"Cra..., "shifu whispered with half closed eyes. "I've probably gone mad."

He smiled coldly.

"Forget the past lifetime. This lifetime, this lifetime.....bastard Heavenly emperor Li, didn't you say you like the play of the little wife chasing the husband?!"

"Shifu?"

He's saying those words, I don't understand again. I shook his shoulder. I felt speaking with be being on the bottom and he being on the top, was a too constraining.

"Let's get up and speak."

"Get up?"

Shifu's tone was that of disbelief. His eyes squinted dangerously.

"When you're face to face with that Zihui, did you also ask him to get up?"

"We've not been speaking like this."

"O? Haven't."

He pointed with his finger.

"Just now, I must've been blinded by the light to see you two there, embracing and cuddling each other."

I followed the direction that his finger was pointing. I saw Zihui, who was cleaning my nosebleed on the ground, with a rag.

This place is really high, you can really see very far.

I blinked and said: "Just now I felt, Zihui was helping me."

"Help you?"

One of shifu's eyebrows rose. Hearing him say those two words, I don't know why my chest tightened.

"Then I'll also help you, alright?"

".....Alright....."

My lips felt soft. Shifu's lips with a taste of wine, made my sense of feeling raise.

I was completely stunned. Suddenly I felt pain on my lower lip. Shifu bit me. I felt really wronged. After shifu let go of me, I immediately covered my mouth and said: "Shifu, this is not helping me, this is biting me."

*(Okay, I take back what I said about her not being stupid. Her naiveness/ stupidity/ dumbness is killing me)*

I just finished speaking, when I saw that shifu's face changed colors. He touched his lips. He looked shocked as if the person, who was bitten, was him.

He coldly stood up and backed a few steps away from me. Suddenly he slipped. This person rolled down the roof. I was shocked and quickly climbed down the ladder. But when I was on the ground, I didn't see shifu. Only a place with broken roof tiles. It has the feeling of an animal went loose.

Shifu disappeared the whole day again. Until evening, when I and Zihui have finished cooking, did he walk into the manor with a pale face. He said nothing and just sat in between me and Zihui.

Seeing that shifu doesn't look good, I didn't dare to speak. I get a plate and chopsticks for him and obediently sat down. But Zihui picked a piece of meat and put it into my bowl. Quite enthusiastic, he said: "A Xiang, today you worked hard. Eat more meat."

I nodded, bowed my head and chew on the meat. Today, I was bitten by shifu. There were some holes on my lip. When the warm

rice touched my wound, I shivered. Intuitively, I spit the meat out. I lifted my head and saw that shifu and Zihui were looking at me. I covered my mouth and vaguely said: "Burned."

Shifu coughed loudly and turned his head. Zihui laughed and said: "So that was it. You should blow on it before eating."

While saying that, he picked a piece of meat for me again. I blew hard on the meat.

The dinner was only half way when Zihui spoke again: "A Xiang, we're now engaged, when will we hold the wedding?"

Shifu put the bowl down with a "ge da" sound. That little sound made my heart skip a beat. I looked at shifu. Shifu stared at Zihui. Zihui, who must not want to live anymore, continued speaking: "Speaking of wedding, there are so many things to do. For example, inviting our parents to witness our wedding."

Shifu's body stiffened. His face turned a shade darker.

I blinked and looked at shifu. Zihui's voice keep ringing in my ears: "Really ashamed, I lost both parents when I was very young. Now there's only me left. Are a Xiang lady's parents still alive? If you can, can you invite them? Elders blessing a marriage are a good thing. Of course, shifu is the best choice to officiate the marriage...."

"Enough."

Shifu broke Zihui's words. His cold voice said: "I don't care who you are nor do I care what your intentions are. I only tell you, xiaoye's patience is already at its limit. If you're sensible, leave today. Xiaoye will not bother you. If you want to stay....."

Shifu paused; his hand gently knocked the table.

"I don't mind adding a stone to the leg of the table."

Zihui didn't flinch, smiled and said: "Shifu is threatening me."

"No, just informing you."

I looked back and forth at the two of them. I'm beginning to not

understand their conversation.

“Shifu, why don’t you ask for a Xiang lady’s wishes? After all, this marriage contract was set because of a Xiang’s lady wishes. Previously, shifu also approved. Breaking the contract now.....”

“Xiaoye, I, just want to break the contract.”

Shifu leaned back on his chair and looked contemptuously at Zihui.

“Come and hit me, ya.”

“Shifu.”

Zihui narrowed his eyes slightly.

“Why don’t you want a Xiang lady to bring a husband and lead a good life?”

I understood these words. So, Zihui has been speaking for me, defending me.

Originally, I was determined to do what shifu wanted, but after hearing those words from Zihui, all my grievances came out. Always ordering me, always bullying me, even forbidding people from helping me, getting mad at me..... abandoning me when he feels like it.

When I think about these things, I couldn’t help myself from glaring at shifu. I couldn’t believe that master just sneered coldly: “I just don’t want to let her have a good life. What about it? And don’t keep saying Xiao Xiang Zi’s wishes. Xiaoye will also tell you, my wishes are her wishes.

Shifu grabbed my hand and pulled me up.

“Xiao Xiang Zi, see the visitor off.”

I kept my head down in silence.

The surrounding was quiet for a while. I whispered with a little resentment: “Shifu.....I still have my own ideas.”

Shifu’s hand loosened. He seemed like he’s suppressing his anger,

but he's also in disbelief. He said: "You...you're bent on marrying him?!"

"I just..."

I wrung my fingers.

"I just think that what shifu said is wrong."

"A Xiang lady."

I was arguing with shifu and didn't notice that Zihui stood at my side now.

He held my waist and at the same time stepped three steps away from shifu.

Shifu's face went white, his dark eyes turned darker. His body lurked to capture me. I was lost in the situation. Suddenly Zihui said gently in my ear: "Since shifu doesn't understand us, let's elope."

I was astonished. I turned around and saw that his face was bright, chuckling.

Shifu's hand hasn't yet had the time to touch my cheek, when my head felt dizzy. Shifu's gloomy voice sounded further and further away.

"Demon, you want to die!"

My eyes went black and I lost consciousness.

# Chapter 17

---

“There’s no good ending coming from an elopement!”

This was the first sentence I said to Zihui, after I woke up. I grabbed his clothes tightly and said with a serious face: “Shengling sect’s butcher once told me that there was a widow in the village, who eloped with a man. Later they were caught and they were drowned in a pig’s cage.”

I was also afraid that shifu will drown me in a pig’s cage. Even my bones won’t be found.

Zihui stared stunningly at me for a moment. He laughed and said: “If that’s the case, then we should not elope.”

“Alright,” I immediately nodded. Even though I still have some complains against shifu, but I’ve never thought about leaving his side.

“Let’s go back and ask shifu for forgiveness.”

I wanted to leave, but Zihui grabbed me.

“If you want to go back to Shengling sect from here, it’ll take half a month.”

I was shocked: “I actually slept for half a month?!”

“No, a Xiang lady only slept for a night,” Zihui said.

“You must also already know that I’m not an ordinary person. I’m a stone turned into essent. Traveling thousands of miles in a blink of eye is just one of those spells I practiced.”

I nodded in understanding: “This is better; we can go back to Fengxueshan manor in a blink of eye.”

“A Xiang, seeing your shifu like that yesterday, do you think your shifu will let us marry, even if we admit our faults?”

I thought for a moment and dejectedly shook my head.

“But we still shouldn’t elope.”

“Of course,” Zihui said laughingly.

“We eloped because we didn’t get the consent of the elders. If we can obtain your parents’ consent, even if shifu isn’t willing, he won’t be able to say anything.”

I blinked and thought for a moment. Those words of Zihui did have some truth in them. But my childhood memories are vague and unclear. I can’t remember where my home is. I can’t remember the appearance of my father and mother.

Zihui said in a strange way: “Over the years, hasn’t a Xiang lady thought about going home and visit your parents?”

I scratched my head.

“I have thought about it, but shifu said that my parents entrusted me to him. If I didn’t master the arts, I couldn’t go home. In so many years, my skills didn’t improve much, so I didn’t dare to go home. Then I thought that accompanying shifu is also pretty good, so I buried it in my heart.”

Zihui stared at me thoughtfully for a while and then he hung his head and quietly whispered: “So, that was the case...Darn, your shifu is really shameful...”

“What?”

Zihui smiled and said: “Nothing. Along the way here I heard some news. I probably know how to get to a Xiang’s home. Stopping here isn’t the answer. Let’s go and see.”

I nodded and didn’t think much. I just followed him from behind.

It didn’t take long, before the scenery slowly made me feel familiar. I happily tugged at Zihui’s sleeve.

“Right, right, this seems to be the road!”

I picked up my pace and began to run excitedly.

“It shouldn’t be far from here. Turning around a corner, there should



be a river. Across the river, is the front door of my house. In front of the front door there are stone lions....”

When we turned, across the river there’s a dilapidated front door. I froze for a moment and then foolishly walked a few steps.

“This isn’t it,” I whispered as I walked.

“The bridge wasn’t this small; the stone lions were more imposing.”

After crossing the bridge, I stood in front of the manor. There’s a broken plaque hanging on the front door, with the words “Yang Fu” on it. The closed doors were sealed with the yellow note of the officials with the words “forbidden” on it.

I stood there, my mind was completely blank.

“A Xiang,” Zihui called me and touched my head.

“Maybe I found the wrong place...”

He hasn’t finished speaking, when a man hastily walked by. Seeing me and Zihui, the man said strangely: “Aiyou, you two, how can you stop here? Let’s go quickly. Here is famous for being haunted. If it isn’t because I need to pass this road to get to the herbs on the mountain, I wouldn’t come here even if they killed me.”

I haven’t even reacted, when he turned around and walked away fast. I grabbed the man’s hand tightly. The man was scared to death and repeatedly exclaimed: “Lady, what are you doing?! What are you doing?! Could it be that a ghost went into your body?!”

“You...you know where here is?”

“Yang...Yang manor, ah.”

I was grabbing on him like a straw and kept asking: “Do you know who used to live here?”

“A business family with the surname Yang. Ten years ago the whole family has been slaughtered by their enemies.”

I loosened my hand. My head felt dizzy. Behind me a hand was supported my back, because I was barely able to keep standing. I

foolishly asked: "What is...slaughtering?"

The man looked at me for a moment and sighed: "You must be a distant relative of this family. Ten years ago, I don't know who the Yang family has offended; thirty people of Yang manor has been silenced. I heard their enemy hired the famous Shengling sect's killers to kill them. Those killers came and went without a trace. They didn't even leave the slightest trace of evidence. The officials had no way of finding the truth and it turned into an unsolved case. Pity those resenting ghosts of Yang family, ah!"

"Sheng...ling sect?"

I thought there was a problem with my ears, so I dug in my ears and asked: "Can you say it again?"

The man looked at me strangely for moment and then said: "Shengling sect ah. Ai, little girl, those mysterious things of the jianghu is not something that we can understand. You, a distant relative must not waste your efforts."

I dug really hard into my ear and slapped myself twice on the cheeks. Zihui grabbed my hand.

"A Xiang!"

I dug in my ear, till it was ringing. But I didn't feel the slightest pain and foolishly asked again: "You said Shengling sect?"

The man was so scared that he took a step back and talked to himself: "Really a ghost entered her body..."

"Did you say it was Shengling sect," I yelled. I was about to go after him, when Zihui embraced me. I could only see the man flee in panic.

I pushed Zihui.

"Why are you grabbing me? I haven't finished asking. He said that it was Shengling sect, who slaught...slaughtered this family, but, but Hujia uncle, Tangzhu sister and the butcher, and shifu, they...." *were obviously so good.*

My throat was choking. I couldn't continue. In my mind a scene

flashed. It's the day, I climbed out of the barrel. The day I saw blood everywhere and people in black holding swords. The coldness of the shining blade and the warm blood that fell on my face. I was in a trance. These burning feeling felt like I passed through a fog in these ten years. The images are clear and lucid as if they only occurred yesterday, burning me through my bone with pain.

I covered my face. My thoughts were a mess.

"A Xiang, let's leave for today."

Zihui patted my back and said: "You need to rest."

I pushed Zihui. My hands were trembling.

"No, I'm going home."

Leaving Zihui's embrace, my legs were slightly trembling. Slowly, step by step, I walked toward the front door. I tore the seal away and pushed hard on the door. But the dusty door was motionless. I knocked on the door and shouted: "Mother..."

After those words left my mouth, my voice turned hoarse: "I'm back."

Childhood memories broke the fog like the sunlight.

Dim light shone on the ruined door, wiping away the dust on the door, making it become bright as ever. I firmly knocked on the door.

"Open the door! Open the door...."

A gray shadow fell on my face. Zihui grabbed my hand. I heard a barely audible sigh: "Let me do it."

He put his hand on the door. Gently he pushed the door. The old door made a "zhiya" sound and slowly opened. Looking pass the door, I can directly see the hall. The furniture inside are just like those in my memory. I walked in with my head down and looked at the red spots on the ground. I lifted my head and looked at the highest place in the hall. That day shifu was standing there, high above others and took me to Shenling sect. Shifu is always high above others, making me not dare to be disrespectful. However, the

shifu I respected...

I shook my head, wanting to throw all the confusing voices from my mind. But shaking, my face became wet. I wiped my face. Not long after, my tears were streaming down again. I stood in the center of the hall, silently, wiping my tears over and over, until Zihui patted me on my shoulder.

"A Xiang, don't cry."

"I did not cry," I said. "It's just...I can't stop them from falling."

Zihui sighed. I didn't have the time to speak, he turned and moved two steps away from me. A "pa" sound rang in my ear. I was shocked. Shifu, dressed in full white, landed outside the hall. In his hands was a crimson whip. With a cold expression and with really dark eyes he glared at Zihui.

"In consideration that cultivating for ten thousand years was not easy, I wanted to let you off the hook. But you didn't take it and keep challenging xiaoye's limits."

Shifu coldly bit his lip.

"If you're deliberately seeking death, I will make your wish come true, alright?"

Zihui didn't speak. I knew that Zihui wouldn't be able to beat shifu. In a hurry, I jumped in front of Zihui and stretched my hand out to protect him. I stared at shifu. I saw his face turned pale as if he has been slapped.

"Xiao Xiang Zi," shifu's eyes squinted slightly. "You, putting this stance, is it to protect your 'husband' and to fight me?"

His tone was frivolous, but I know that shifu was really angry. At this point my mind was cluttered. I just shook my head and didn't know what to say. Shifu's expression was slightly angry. He held out his hand and yelled gently like how he used to do when he was taking me home: "Come here."

But here and now, my legs wouldn't move. Shifu was also not urging

me. His hand was still there, waiting for me to grab it. I stared at shifu for a moment. My throat hurt and I blurted out: "Shifu...my parents..."

Shifu frowned: "The matters that that happened here, I'll explain them to you when we go back."

Looking at shifu's eyes, I couldn't help but get chills. The Zihui behind me gently held my shoulder and said softly: "A Xiang, don't be afraid, I'm here."

Shifu's hand tightened around the whip.

"What identity do you have?" (*What rights do you have to be speaking?*)

"Shifu."

It's the first time I interrupted him. I asked: "My father and mother, did shifu kill them..."

I stared at shifu and didn't dare to blink. He was silent and didn't say anything to refute.

"Was it shifu?"

After saying those words, I choked.

"Was it shifu?"

Knowing that his silence meant that he's admitting, my world collapsed.

"Xiao Xiang Zi," shifu's voice was a little numb. "There are a lot of things that you don't understand. After we go back, I'll explain them to you. But today, you should not rely on this demon's embrace. He's not a good thing. Come here, we'll go back."

I shook my head. I just want to grab something and hit him. I didn't care, pulled the hairpin out of my hair and ran to him.

"Shifu liar! Big liar! You go away!"

My hair was loosened and turned into a mess. It pasted on my wet

face. I didn't know how this embarrassed look looked like. The tears blurred my sight. I couldn't see shifu's face clearly anymore. Only knew that he stood there transfixed and didn't move.

The hand on my shoulder tightened. Zihui pulled me into his arms. He patted my back and said: "Shifu doesn't want to go away. Then we should go first. Nowadays, it's better if you don't meet."

I kept nodding. His chest turned wet from my tears and snot. This time I didn't know if shifu has come to stop me or not. However, I didn't hear him grit his teeth from anger.

# Chapter 18 Ending 2nd lifetime

---

“Dida” sound of the water in the stone cave.

“Where is this...,” I kept sobbing while sitting on a rock. Zihui squatted in front of me and gave me a towel.

“You can say that it’s my home. A Xiang, don’t cry anymore.”

I took the towel and wiped my face, while choking: “Although I’m stupid, but I still remember that father and mother was very good to me. Shifu, shifu was obviously also very good to me...But why did he kill my parents? Why did he lie to me?”

Zihui was silent for a moment before he said: “A Xiang, now you can’t return to Shengling sect anymore. What are you going to do next?”

“I...haven’t thought about it yet.”

I shook my head: “I hit shifu. Shifu wouldn’t want me anymore. I also don’t want to go back to Shengling sect. Home...I also can’t go back home. I...don’t know.”

Zihui grabbed my hand and quietly looked at me. In the darkness of his eyes, I saw a hint of purple flew across.

“From now on, a Xiang, let’s live together, alright?”

He stretched out his hand and touched my face. I inexplicable felt that this isn’t right. I wanted to hide, but his hand left as quickly as it had come.

“You can be my wife. I’ll treat you better than your shifu. I’ll not lie to you and I’ll not abandon you.”

I looked at him for a moment: “But, shifu still hasn’t agreed.....”

Zihui was stunned for a moment and then said laughingly: “Shifu? Silly girl, he slaughtered your whole family, you still see him as your shifu?”

The tears fell down again: "Can't I see him as shifu anymore?"

After all, shifu was really good to me.

"Right, you can no longer have the bond of disciple and master after this blood feud."

Zihui hold my hand tightly, like a temptation he said: "I'll marry you and take care of you in the stead of your shifu. Are you willing?"

I looked at how my tears fell onto his hand. Then I nodded. Zihui laughed, stood up and touched my head.

"A Xiang, this is nice. In my family, there's a tradition that whoever marrying into my family will need to drink a bowl of this medicine. It makes the body more fit to live with me. A Xiang, do you want to drink it?"

I nodded mechanically. Zihui left my sight. Soon he came back holding a bowl of red medicine. I didn't have any suspicion and swallowed it. A fishy sweet and warm feeling, like drinking a mouthful of blood, making my chest felt stuffy.

Zihui patted my head with a face full of happiness. He pointed at the stone bed and said: "These two days must have tired you out. Go take a rest."

In fact, I don't want to sleep. But I don't know why after listening to his words, my feet moved on their own to the bed and obediently lay down. I closed my eyes. My world turned into darkness. My brain was filled of Shengling sect and Fengxueshan manor and, and shifu's one moment laughing face and one moment angry face...

I thought that I'll never see that kind of shifu anymore. After becoming Zihui's bride, I'll settle down in this stone cave.

I didn't want to step out of this cave. I always think that there are monsters outside, who wants to eat me. I became really lazy. Here, no one lets me do the laundry and make the bed. Nobody likes to let me fan him and turn the page of his books.

Zihui was often absent. I sit all day long on the stone bed and didn't



know what time or day it is. I live with the nature. But I didn't think that these days are relaxed. They're like a block of stone, putting pressure on my heart, making it hard to breathe.

Today, Zihui came back. I was complaining about the bad air in this cave, making people's hearts feel stuffy. Zihui smiled distractedly and said: "Excuse me, I lack a heart. I don't know what a stuffy heart feels like."

"Heart?"

I didn't understand.

"But everyone has one ah. It's here."

I pointed at my heart. This is also one of those things shifu taught me. Thinking about it made me feel melancholy.

"En, I know," Zihui was still smiling. He seems like in trance. "I've also had one, but I didn't cherish it and gave it to someone else."

"Can you give a heart to others?"

"Ordinary people can't, but it's possible for demons and gods."

Zihui's lips straightened. It's sensual with some coldness.

"The heart can be made into an excellent elixir."

I was shocked: "Someone else made elixir with your heart?"

Zihui was silent for a while and then laughed coldly: "No, I pulled it out myself, made an elixir out of it and gave it to someone else."

He said it so lightly. I curiously approached him and poked his chest.

"In here it's empty? Does it hurt? Does it feel cold?"

After waiting for a long time and still didn't hear Zihui's answer, I lifted my head to look at him. I saw him staring at me. After a really long time did he touch my head and said with a wry smile: "Silly girl."

Suddenly Zihui rolled his eyes. His smile changed. It was like that day. He took me to the bed and sat down. He patted my head lightly

with his hand and said: "Rest."

He only said this one word, I felt how my eyes turned black and I lost the five senses.

I didn't know how much time has passed, but strangely my eyes can see again. It's still this cave. I sat still on the stone bed. Zihui was standing next to me. There was one more man in front. Seeing him, I shivered. Intuitively, I wanted to run to him. But I don't know why, I couldn't even move the slightest bit. I was afraid and wanted to speak. But even my lips wouldn't open. My body was like the dead.

"I waited for celestial star, Chu Kong, for a long time."

"What have you done to her," shifu stared at me, frowning.

"Celestial star, don't worry. I temporarily closed the five senses. She only can't feel the outside world."

"Talk straight."

Shifu's eyes turned away from me and he coldly said: "You used so many efforts to seduce my stupid disciple. In the end what do you want?"

"The heart of a demigod."

I was startled. Zihui, he...he wanted shifu's heart!

"Oh, little demon's ambition is not small."

Shifu's gaze faintly swept over me.

"Why are you so assured that I'll give it to you?"

"I'm not assured, I was just playing with luck. I guessed that coming to the human world is just an experience to the gods. To celestial star, Chu Kong's eyes, this lifetime is only a road to another beginning. Your body of this lifetime is only a temporary shell. Gods are always cold toward life and death, but celestial star treat this silly girl really special. So I made a bet. Since I only have one month left to live, I'm not afraid to offend you. Sure enough, even with how a Xiang treated you, you still helplessly chased after us."

Shifu's eyes squinted slightly. His hand tightened around the whip.

"Oh, do you really think that I value this stupid disciple? You love to kill her, then kill her. You love to eat her, then eat her. I've come because I want to destroy you, an outrageous stone demon. You dare to calculate xiaoye, even if I scatter your soul, it wouldn't be enough to pay me back."

My mind is inexplicable at peace, but a cold overwhelmed me. It felt as if a snake was wrapped around me. I was at loss when Zihui smiled: "My power isn't a match for the magical powers of a celestial star. If celestial star wants to kill me, then kill. I'm helpless. It's just that I and a Xiang have married. My blood flows in her blood. She and I are connected with the same soul. Our life and death are connected with each other. If celestial star doesn't care about this stupid disciple, then you can scatter my and her soul."

"Married, soul connected....you...."

Shifu gritted his teeth. The hand holding the whip trembled a little.

I felt Zihui's hand from behind. He grabbed my shoulder and sat down beside me. He said: "Celestial star, see, do you want to settle it today or do you want to see me and a Xiang's soul cease to exist after a month? Never being reincarnated again. Will that lessen the resentment of celestial star?"

Shifu turned silent. His eyes were quietly cold, the color dark as the night. Suddenly, he waved and fiercely smacked Zihui's face. And I felt an inexplicable pain. My face was burning with pain. My cheek became sticky with blood.

"This whip, celestial star didn't use full force. If celestial start doesn't believe me, you can kill me and test it," Zihui said laughingly.

"I'm a clean stone demon and can't do sinister things. No matter if it's becoming my wife or giving me a heart, it must be done willingly. Because if even the slightest force is used, the effectiveness will be gone and it'll cause great harm. The heart of a demigod can help me get back the power I had lost. I can change back to an immortal demon. A Xiang can also live on for a long time. To save or to kill is

all in celestial star's hand."

I stared at shifu. My heart is bursting with horror. Suddenly shifu smiled and my breath stifled. I heard him say: "Very well, this way, xiaoye will settle it with you."

Shifu pulled out a knife, like the one the cook used, a ten inch long knife. He stabbed the knife into his own chest. Shifu complexion turned white. Like he doesn't feel pain, he guided the knife down his chest. I could hear the sound of flesh tearing apart.

I was so startled that I nearly went mad. The hand on my shoulder stiffened slightly. It seems like he also didn't expect this.

Shifu said with a carefree voice: "Stone demon, do you think that xiaoye, I, fell into your trap?"

His wrist turned. His complexion whitened a little more, but his expression didn't change. There were some sweats on his forehead.

"It's only because your luck is good and happened to encounter xiaoye's weak days. If you let me encounter you in the future.... I'll let you feel that living is more painful than death."

But future....what future?

My mind felt like an earthquake just happened. I struggled to shout out loud, but I couldn't move even the slightest.

Shifu twisted the knife. Immediately his clothes soaked in blood. I can hear the beating of his heart lying in his body like the times I had nightmares and went to shifu's bed. He will say: "I'm here; no one will dare to bully you."

At that time I can hear his warm and calm voice, while I was lying in his arms. It cut all my uneasiness.

Shifu.....

Shifu turned around and bent a little. I hear a sound that couldn't be smothered. Red splatter of blood dropped on the ground. Shifu tossed the red thing in his hand randomly, like tossing a worthless stone.

“Here...well, this is xiaoye’s reward for you.”

The hand on my shoulder, left. My eyes couldn’t move. I could only stare blankly at shifu. Shifu was also staring at me. He was white as a sheet. Gently he moved his lips: “You’re not allowed to tell her about today. You’re not allowed to tell her about me. This girl is extremely stupid. If you lie to her for a few times, she’ll forget.”

Shifu...I won’t.

“For a silly girl you give up a life and you don’t want her to remember your good. Don’t you feel disadvantageous?”

“Hmpf...none of your business, just....”

Shifu grabbed his chest and coldly laughed: “If you don’t let her live a long and good life, what I have is many opportunities to let you suffer.”

After those words he turned his body. Leaning on the cave, straightening his spine, difficult but yet relaxed he walked away.

My chest’s heat seemed also to have been emptied. I couldn’t think of anything. I only felt that I should stay at shifu’s side. No matter what was done, no matter how deep our blood feud is, I should be by his side like before: turning the pages of his book, fanning him, making his bed and doing laundry.

I didn’t know how long shifu has left. My head felt warm. Zihui was patting my head and said the word “free”. I felt loose like someone has pumped my bones. My whole body felt soft. Trembling, it came to life. I looked at the pool of blood on the floor. My nose felt sour, tears fell down.

“A Xiang?”

Zihui was actually a little surprised.

“You actually...”

He nodded like he understood.

“You were with him for so long. You must learn some tricks. No

wonder you can break the seal.”

Zihui stretched his hand and pulled me.

“Don’t be too persistent about this life. Your shifu is not a normal person...”

I shoved him and grabbed his hand. I bit really hard on it. I really want to crush his bones.

“Give shifu his heart back! Give it back to him!”

I kept repeating those words. My mouth tasted Zihui’s blood and my own tears.

Zihui didn’t push me away. He only said gently: “He shouldn’t be able to go far. After a while we can go together and bury him.”

His warm blood rolled down my throat. These days my body suddenly relaxed.

Shifu, shifu...I can’t figure out Zihui. What demigod’s heart, what blood feud. I only know that shifu must be very sad now. He’s alone with an empty chest. So much blood has been shed and nobody is taking care of him.

I no longer cared about Zihui and stood up. I ran out of the cave.

Having not moved for many days, I felt a little dizzy. Out of the cave did I see that this is actually a stone hill surrounded by cliffs. There’s only a path to the top of the hill. On the road, there’s bright red blood. I followed the blood trail and called out: “Shifu, shifu.”

Desolate wind was blowing. I turned around a corner and climbed on top of the hill. Shifu was lying there. His blood dripped all over the floor. I felt my heart tightening and not opening again. My throat seemed to be blocked and I couldn’t make the slightest sound. I knelt in front of him and whimpered: “Shifu...”

I picked up his head. My fingertip felt cold. He’s so powerful like a hero who can conquer everything. Why is he so pale and frail at this time?

Shifu's closed eyes suddenly moved and opened. In his eyes flashed a panic I don't understand. Then he sighed and his lips moved: "Stupid..."

"I'm stupid!"

I busily kept saying: "All is because of me...because of me."

"Stupid disciple, snort dripping on my face....dirty and ugly."

Shifu's hand rose halfway, but he didn't have energy and put it down. I hold his hand, buried my head against it and cried. Shifu sighed: "Ten years ago, slaughtering Yang family was not my intention. But the lives of more than thirty people are indeed buried by Shengling sect's hands. If you want to blame me, then blame."

"I don't blame you."

I shook my head.

"I don't blame. I'll go back with shifu to Fengxueshan manor. I'll also fan and turn the page of the book for you. Also massaging your leg and back for you! I...I'll never want a husband again. I only want shifu. Let's go back. Let's go back together."

"Interesting."

Shifu looked relaxed as if he can look through the sky. His voice was weak and small: "I didn't fall into the demon's trap and I also didn't lose to you...."

Shifu gritted his teeth really hard.

"I just didn't win against destiny."

"Can't win....forget it. You saved me, I saved you. Previous lifetime...this lifetime, we..."

Shifu was really tired and he slowly closed his eyes.

"Are even."

"Let's go back, let's go back..."

Beside those words, I couldn't say anything else. The wind whistled around us. Not only shifu, but it also seemed that my heart has also been cut out. It felt really empty.

"A Xiang."

I didn't know for how long I sat there, holding shifu. Suddenly I heard a loud call. It's Zihui. He stood two steps away from me and said in a whisper: "I'll follow his wishes. In the future, I'll take care of you in your shifu stead. I'll treat you the same as he treated you. Don't be so sad anymore."

I looked at him in trance. I touched shifu's empty chest. Confused I thought: *Shifu isn't a good man, but he was good to me. In this world no one can compare. There's no one who can be my shifu anymore. There's no one to hold my hand and take me back to Fengxueshan manor anymore. I can't go back anymore....*

I hold onto shifu's body tightly and took few steps back. The mountain wind whistled in my ears. The sky is getting further away from me. Everything is so blurred, only shifu's cold body is still beside me. I'll wait for him, always wait for him. Until one day in the future, in a sunny afternoon, through the curls of the incense, I could hear him call me softly: "Xiao Xiang Zi, come here."

I closed my eyes. The world was silent.

The soul collectors put a shackling on me. Step by step I walked on the road to the netherworld. With every step more memories came back. Heaven, the netherworld, Yue Lao temple, the bridge, soup of oblivion....

Heheheh he he.....

Chu Kong, you've really done it! You've really done it!



# Chapter 19

---

Only half way on the road to the netherworld; the gate of the netherworld is still not visible, my heart felt that something heavy is pressing on it, making my feet unable to move. I yelled, squatted down and wept bitterly.

So shameful! Such a big shame!

When I closed my eyes, in my mind there'll be a really stupid thing with a large face full of excitement calling out: "Shifu, shifu."

I covered my face. The long autumn leaves fell out when a cool wind passed by.

That's me...that fucking person with a low intelligent and is like a dog, is actually me!

"I like shifu the most!"

"I'll go back with shifu to Fengxueshan manor. I'll also fan you and turn the pages of your book and also massage your legs and shoulder!"

"Shifu."

"Shifu."

Shifu, shifu.....

Those words of that idiot kept repeating in my ears like Buddha's scriptures, reminding me how I lived without dignity for fifteen years.

I grabbed my hair and gritted my teeth really hard. This is the ugliest stain in my life of a few hundred of years.

That's right, Chu Kong, you've done it. You really ordered me like I was a eunuch!

The soul collector next to me finally couldn't stand it anymore. He patted my shoulder.

“Hey...are you still alright?”

I shed blood tears, turned and smiled at him miserably: “All is fine. Everything has already passed. I’ve calmed down.”

The soul collector was scared and took a few steps back. He bit his lips a few times and said: “Then let’s go quickly. This time don’t make a mess again. Heaven has sent people down accusing the netherworld of being incompetent.”

I stood up and followed the soul collector, while listening to him complain: “Ai, does cloud fairy and celestial, Chu Kong has something against our netherworld? When you two meet, you’ll always create a mess in the netherworld. We’re already very busy and you simply kept making trouble for us!”

I nodded and the words “I’m sorry” was just out of my mouth, when I looked up. It’s the river of forgetfulness and that bridge again. By the bridge is that hateful man again. He stood upright with a bowl of soup in his hand. He was talking to another soul collector. It looks like he’s about to go into the circle of reincarnation again.

I know I should be calm. I also know I should be rational. Wait till he drinks the soup of oblivion and then kick him into the circle of reincarnation. Then next life will be easy to handle. But I don’t know why when I think it’s all about him making me massage his shoulder and legs, turning the pages of his books and fanning him; that shameful and hateful look. The most hateful thing is that at the time I was dying, I was still thinking about massaging his shoulder and legs, turning the pages of his book and fanning him! And still want to go back?

Go to fucking hell!

This is like slavery being buried deep in my bones!

This lifetime! This humiliating lifetime! All because of that man. That coquettish celestial star...celestial star....

“Chu Kong...”

I clenched my fists. My body was shaking uncontrollably.

“I’m sorry, ah...”

I glared at Chu Kong and said to soul collector: “I’m sorry ah, I’ll give you trouble.”

I didn’t wait till I finish speaking. I didn’t wait for the soul collector to react. My body moved and in a blink of eye, I’m standing before Chu Kong. I saw that he is looking at me in shock. I also hear him say angrily: “Fuck! Stone demon cheated on xiaoye!”

I smiled through gritted teeth. My fist hit his face. The strength was so great that it nearly broke his bones.

“Cheat on you...Today, I’ll make you disappear!”

All the eyes of the ghosts saw Chu Kong’s body fly in the sky and made half a circle. With a “boom” sound he fell on the side of the sixth circle of reincarnation. Dust flew in the air. He slowly stood up and wiped the blood from his mouth. With cold eyes he said: “You dare to put your hands on shifu? Xiao Xiang Zi, your gut is fat, ah.”

I raised my head and looked at him with my nostril.

“Ah, you still dare to talk to me like that? Do you still think I’m that idiot?”

Chu Kong’s expression was really terrifying. The scene was really quiet. The soul collectors took immediate action. They went hurriedly to Yanwang’s palace. Another came to me with a chain. And another tried to persuade: “Calm down! Calm down! You two, gods, calm down!”

My whole body seemed in raging flames, burning me really hard. I jumped over the bridge and landed beside Chu Kong.

“Shifu? Only you have the nerve to let me call you such a vulgar title. And you enjoyed listening to it for fifteen years! Very well, very well! Since today we’re both in our right minds, let’s settle all the previous bad scores.”

“Bad scores?”

Chu Kong stood up. He didn’t punch me back after I punched him.

He patted his clothes, squinted his eyes and said: "Xiaoye is broadminded, returning the evil you did in the previous lifetime with good, by giving you shelter. Finally, I saved your life and now you came to the netherworld to settle the scores with me?"

"Hehehe he, you actually dare to mention previous lifetime to me! You actually dare to mention previous lifetime!"

I laughed like someone who's insane.

"Good, good, you're broadminded. You saved me. I beg you to save me again. Save the netherworld, alright? Go cut your heart out, then die, alright? Can't do it? No problem, I can help you. Grab a knife and benefit from it!"

While I was talking, my punch went to Chu Kong again. He was surprised and grabbed my hand. With some anger he said: "You shrew! Can't you just talk for once?!"

"Well said!"

I was also getting really angry.

"My mind is filled with fifteen years of you insulting me and the two soups of oblivion that tastes like blood and caused those fifteen insulting years! Beside we also have a blood feud between us. It's greater than slaughtering my whole family. You want me to talk nicely to you? You go lie down and become a corpse first. I'll sit by your side and talk nicely to you."

"Ha," Chu Kong laughed. "You made it seem that in these years only you have suffered! You were a fool! If you didn't mention it, I still thought that you were pretending to be a fool to punish me! Xiaoye is broadminded and didn't bother with those things you've done. Finally, I sacrificed my life to save you. In the end you still dare to blame me?"

In my mind suddenly flashed Chu Kong's pale face. Inexplicably, my heart felt weird. I stiffened for a moment and immediately I pressed down those feelings with anger.

"Save me? I thank you very much! Who wants you to save me? Why

pretend to be noble? What?! Wants me to live a long and good life? You clearly want to hurry and go to the netherworld to reincarnate to break the link of our next few lifetimes. Don't think that I didn't see through your selfishness!"

Chu Kong's jaw tightened, creating a stern look. His lips moved, but he immediately closed them. His face was blue with anger.

I continued: "I won't fulfill your wish. So I came down to reincarnate together with you. I insist on bothering you till you die from anger. Hit me, hit me, hit me!"

"Xiaoye, I will hit you today!"

He was so angry that you could see smoke forming above his head. A hand grabbed my clothes. I was also very angry. I reacted very fast and put a hand behind his head. I grabbed his hair.

"You let go! Otherwise I'll pull out all your hair today!"

"You dare to threaten me!"

"I'm threatening you and so what?"

We took deep breaths at the same time. Big eyes glared at small eyes for a long while, yet no one hit the other first.

A very weak voice came: "You guys, drink the soup of oblivion first and then continue your talk. After the talk you can go reincarnate. This is the best solution..."

My ears twitched. I turned and looked at the direction of the bridge. A ghost put the soup of oblivion in a bowl. Behind him there were many other ghosts. At the direction of Yanwang's palace, there were many hasty footsteps rushing over. It's Yangwang and the magistrate. I looked around and my gaze fell at the ghost holding a bowl of soup of oblivion. A dark taste echoed in my throat. I turned and looked at Chu Kong. Chu Kong was also looking at me.

Is this man...is this man who forced me to drink two bowls of soup, letting me have such a shameful lifetime. A fire started to burn in my heart. I said: "Drink, of course I'll drink. This lifetime I'll sink three

bowls in your throat!”

After saying that I raised my hand to grab Chu Kong. Chu Kong was startled. He bent down quickly.

“Vicious!”

I couldn’t pull him at that moment. Hearing him curse at me, I thought about last time when he forced me to drink the soup, why didn’t he say that he was vicious?!

At once, I was furious. I rose up and bit him. My bite locked on his arm. He growled with a pained voice: “Dogs must be your relatives!”

He pinched my face and said: “Drop your mouth!”

My mouth wouldn’t let go and I punched his stomach really hard. When I was about to give him a second punch, Chu Kong turned his body and escaped my punch. In fact, I couldn’t beat celestial star Chu Kong. That’s why in a blink of eye, my back hurt. Chu Kong was pressing me against the well. He grabbed my neck and said: “Apologize! Otherwise, you can go and turn into an *animal*<sup>1</sup> next lifetime!”

Well, see who will become an animal!

I bit him harder. My knees bent. It reached his belly. Chu Kong hurdled in pain. I gave a loud shout and used all my strength to pull him up. Chu Kong was stunned. I gathered more strength to put him into the well. With his head faced down, he plummeted into the reincarnation circle of animals. I was rejoicing. Finally I got rid of Chu Kong for the next lifetime! But my face hasn’t had the time to laugh, when I suddenly felt a pain on my scalp. Chu Kong actually grabbed my loose hairs at the same time I grabbed him. I focused too one-sided. My body stiffened. My scalp felt painful. Ominous alarm bells rang in my mind. I stretched my hand to grab on something, but I caught only the emptiness of the air. Chu Kong’s evil laughter resounded in the air. He dragged me down to the bottomless well.

“Come and enjoy with me! Enjoy with me!”

The spirit, I opened my eyes wide, seeing the darkness of the

netherworld getting farther away from me. In my ears sounded Yanwang's voice with no emotion: "Aiya, bad, two gods fell into the well of animals. How will this end? Well, I better go and write a report."

Animals...these animals!

---

### Notes

1. 畜生 (*chùshēng*): *animal*. Chinese people use this word to scold and curse at people. They see animals as something less than humans.

## Chapter 20

---

After I opened my eyes, the world seemed different from the world in the past. Surprisingly, my vision can see really far. My sense of smell is really sensitive. The taste of soil, the smell of grass and there's a fishy smell in the air at the moment.

I blinked. I felt that my body was a little strange. I stood up with shaking legs, but there are four legs. They are four furry claws. I raised my "hand". Startled, I looked at it for a moment. This...if I'm not wrong, this group is called tiger. I turned and looked at my back. I saw my long body and hairy ass. There's also a white tail with a nice pattern.

I was startled for a moment. Then the memories began to come back. Oh! I fell into the well of animals and reincarnated into an animal.

Animal!

I hugged my face with the claws.

Great insult ah great insult!

Such a great existence as I, a fairy cloud, turned into such a state! I bit back my bitter tears. My broken heart and sadness will not change the fact that I've turned into an animal. It was totally disheartened. I was stupefied for days. My heart felt sour. But then I thought that Chu Kong also turned into an animal, something with four legs, my mood turned better.

Well, Heavenly emperor Lee, you arrange it. Let's see how you will turn this into an inspiring love story about two animals that couldn't even talk. I'm waiting.

I sighed positively. Suddenly something bit my neck. I smelled the smell of the tigress. My "mother" has come...

Perhaps it's instinct. Though I was now dangling and the tigress



biting me in my neck, I was not wary.

If she used a little more force she can bite me to death. But I let myself dangling from her mouth. She brought me back to “home.” I returned “home” without having to touch a single grass. There are two of my siblings playing. Seeing that the tigress has returned, they kept walking around mother to drink milk. The tigress put me down. Lazily, I lay on the ground with a look of needing someone to assist me to eat. My siblings immediately scrapped around mother. I looked at mother’s hairy belly. Bitter tears felt down my eyes. I stayed at the tigress side and shivered. Suddenly, my back felt warm. A warm and strangely comfortable feeling climbed on my back. I turned and looked in dismay. The tigress extended her tongue and licked my hairy forehead (see the first picture).

I was startled at being licked. In the time I was shocked, she licked me from head to toe. Finally, contented she touched my head as if to say: “En, I’m done, you can go play.”

So like this I was actually...being belittled by a tigress...

Although I know that she is using her tongue to comb my hair, but I ...I ...I burst into tears. While in the netherworld, why didn’t I drink that soup of oblivion?

With an extremely contradictory heart, I hobbled to the belly side. Looking at my siblings sucking and hearing my belly rumbling, I closed my eyes, bent my head and leaned over the belly. Such a life is also an experience.

After living for a few days like this, I came to my senses. Now even though I’m an animal, but that doesn’t prevent me from practicing. I can practice and become a demon. Then I can live a decent human life! But the problem is that even if I practice very much, I won’t cultivate and become Yue Lao’s temple’s fairy. I would just become something parallel to that. In my previous practices, I would only increase my cultivation. Now I don’t have a clue how to start. I hung my head and sighed.

The warm sunlight sprinkled on me through the dense foliage. I yawned lazily. In my hazy memories I saw Chu Kong rocking on a

chair reading. He said: "Xiao Xiang Zi, 'I observe one, to keep the place in peace' did you understand those words?"

Of course I understand. The one who doesn't understand is that fool.

Right! I still remember the tricks Chu Kong taught me in the previous lifetime. Before I was too stupid and didn't learn them well. Chu Kong has been teaching me how to enter. Now I only need to recall his guidance. I was excited and began to jump. The two tiny tigers next to me also began to jump. I ignored them. I looked for a quiet place and tried to remember all those tricks. Meditating, I started my cultivation.

Three months haven't even passed when the tigress began to teach us how to hunt. My reactions are significantly faster than the two other cubs. According to the current situation, I would be able to talk after one year of practicing. This knowledge made me very happy. In my heart, I was very impressed by Chu Kong and his tricks. No wonder in the previous lifetime, he cultivated from a mortal to a demigod in just two decades. Although that guy is really arrogant, he does have some true abilities.

Today the sun is just right. The air is full of cultivation. I took a rest and rolled on the ground. I began to think about the previous lifetime.

In fact if I stop and think about it, Chu Kong didn't treat me extremely bad in the previous life. While in the netherworld, new hate and old hate stacked together, that's why I was so angry. Now that I think about it, Chu Kong likes to order people around, likes to bully people, has a bad temper, is harsh on people, doing things a little overboard, but he treated that disciple, silly Xiang well. At the end, he even cut out his heart to save me. It can be considered that we formed some sort of friendship. Is it only friendship? When he cut out his heart, he didn't hesitate. If it was me, I wouldn't be able to do it. After all is my own flesh. It's different from when I saved Lu Hai Kong. When I saved Lu Hai Kong some other people did it.

The sunlight went into my eyes. It felt a little hazy. I don't know why, suddenly I remember that day on top of the roof. Drunken Chu Kong kissed Xiang.

My limbs were stiff. My mind turned blank in an instant.

He didn't drink the soup of oblivion. I know. He knows it better than me, but in the previous lifetime he.....

It must be the wine that muddled his head or....A thought formed in my head that made me blush. But tigers do not blush. So my whole body turned really hot. It can't be...it can't be!

That arrogant celestial star Chu Kong actually....actually fell in love with me? I shook my head, forcing myself to throw this absurd thought out of my mind. I and he are enemies, doomed enemies! Although in the two previous lifetimes, no matter if it was I who has memories or Chu Kong who has memories, we didn't use a ruthless hand against each other. But when we see each other we always fight! Although it seems that this time it's only I who beat him, he only used his mouth....

Why am I explaining for him?!

I sharpened my claws on a piece of wood. I saw it as Chu Kong's face and happily clawed it. After my heart calmed down, I put my head on the piece of wood. Suddenly a fantastic thought crossed my mind. If Chu Kong is like Lu Hai Kong, if he likes me, then I'll also be happy. My body turned slightly hot, but I didn't think it's a bad thing.

Staying by the tigress side, I grew very fast. After about a year, the tigress is pregnant again. She drove us away to let us search for our own territory. Timely, I can talk now. I can be regarded as an intelligent animal. I don't need to use much effort to search for food unlike my siblings. Being a king of the forest is quite comfortable. At least none of the animals whom want to continue living will dare to provoke me. Usually it's like that, but in life there are always things you don't expect.

It was a beautiful sunset. I lay quietly at the lake, drinking water. Suddenly, a breeze of wind passed by. I smelled a prey. But this sort of prey has always been in groups. Then why do I only smell one smell?

I looked up. The sunrays make the lake sparkling bright. At the other

side of the lake a black animal was also quietly drinking water. His looks felt familiar. A thought flashed in my mind. I gently spoke: “Chu Kong?”

The animal stiffened. Then he also looked up. Our eyes met. Instantly I recognized the other’s identity.

“Pu!”

I laughed really hard. The animal’s body turned stiffer. I was lying on the floor and beat my chest unstoppable with my claws.

“Wild boar! Hahahaha! You actually reincarnated into the prince of *pigs*<sup>[1]</sup>! Hahaha!”

Chu Kong seemed a little angry. He turned around and walked away. I saw it and tried my best to stop laughing. I stepped into the lake and swam to him.

“Hey! Wait, I’ve something to discuss with you.”

Once again, I set foot on shore. I shook the water. Looking at him, I laughed with a “pu” sound again. Chu Kong seemed really mad now. He hmpfed coldly. Proudly he raised his head and said: “I really don’t know what’s so proud about a girl turning into a tigress. Is this the irony of the gods?”

His voice was really thick. It’s deeper than usual. I didn’t have the strength to refute him after all that laughter. Chu Kong couldn’t tolerate it anymore and kicked the stones on the ground. One after one they landed on my head. They made my head hurt. I got mad: “Don’t you like me?! Why do you always bully me?!”

Chu Kong was startled. He took a few steps back. He stammered for quite a while before saying angrily: “Who who who who who..... who the fuck likes you?!”

“In the previous you didn’t drink the soup of oblivion, but you still kissed me!”

“That’s because I was drunk.”

“You don’t like seeing me with the stone demon. You were jealous.”

“That’s because I hate the stone demon.”

“Finally, you dug your heart out to save me.”

“That’s only because I own you a favor.”

“No matter what else you say, you, Lu Hai Kong absolutely fell in love with me in that lifetime!”

“That’s because I drank the soup of oblivion and was delirious!”

I asked, he replied. It felt like he rehearsed it for countless of times in his heart. I don’t know why, but hearing those answers, I felt disappointed. Fortunately, animals couldn’t make facial expressions. I nodded and said: “So it’s like that, in your heart you still want to harm me.”

Chu Kong said fiercely: “This conclusion, how did you...”

His voice stopped, seeming like he eat the last part that he was about to say. He was silent for a while. He took a few breaths, gritted his teeth and said: “That’s right! I just want to harm you. Hurry up and go reincarnate and get out of my sight.”

“Heng, do you think I like to look at you?”

I rubbed my forehead and said: “Wild boar Kong, let’s make a deal. Let’s draw a clear line. In this lifetime, you don’t step into my territory and I don’t step into your territory. Don’t care how Heavenly emperor Li has arranged it. If we never contact each other again, it’ll be alright.”

Chu Kong stared at me for a moment. He didn’t say anything when the earth shook. A group of birds fly by. The mountain suddenly turned lively. I was startled.

“Is the earth ox turning his body?”

Chu Kong said with a serious tone: “No.”

He immediately ran to the west. I shook my head. I don’t know the reason, so I curiously ran after him.

---

## Notes

1. *Pigs are seen as stupid, dirty and lazy in China. XXZ is mocking Chu Kong.*

# Chapter 21 Ending third lifetime

---

*a cuter picture of wild boar Kong*

“Hey.”

Hiding in the grass, I asked Chu Kong in a low voice: “What are they worshipping?”

At this time the sunlight gradually faded and the night came. Two men holding three torches were kneeling on the ground against a dusky hole. Bowing three times and worshipping with great respect.

Chu Kong didn’t answer my question. His eyes were fixed on the two men. A little while later he said: “You go and howl two times.”

His attitude made me unhappy. I smiled coldly: “Go howl yourself. Why should I go?”

Chu Kong didn’t say anything. A hoof landed on my paw. I howled in pain, shocking all the tigers in the mountain. I gritted my teeth. This guy...this guy....

“Ah,” one of the man exclaimed.

“Ti...tiger!”

Together with two torches in his hands, he fell on the ground. Like someone paralyzed, he only moved a little back. The other guy hold his torch in front of me, while he steps back. Stepping back, he pulled the man on the ground up.

“Calm, calm down! She’s afraid of fire. She’ll not come here easily.”

Since he said that, I moved towards him. The two men were so afraid that they were trembling and sweating. One of them fell down. I was surprised for a moment and wondered if I’ve scared somebody to death. The other man suddenly started to run. In a blink of eye, he was gone. He must be thinking that since I’ve a prey, I would certainly not chase him.

I shook my head while sighing. When it's between life and death, you can see someone clearly. Behind me there was a sound of grass rustling. Wild boar Kong stepped out. I patted the man who collapsed on the ground with my paw.

"Hey, look at what happened because of you. You took him back to the village on the foot of the mountain."

"You still have the heart to care about these stupid humans," Chu Kong said. "You're still as ignorant as ever."

He ignored me and walked with his four hooves carefully into a dark cave. Although I was dissatisfied with his attitude, but seeing the always arrogant Chu Kong being so careful, I hold back my temper and carefully walk behind him.

Inside the cave, it's really dark. If humans enter here they will get lost. Fortunately, the vision of tigers is stronger than humans. I can see all the things in the cave clearly: where the stones are, where the puddles are...wait, why does this puddle smell like blood?

My gaze followed the sound of water dripping. There was a hole on the wall. The water is flowing out from there.

I was still looking at the hole, when suddenly a human head slowly came out. My heart went through a shock. I was stunned for a moment. I saw that the man's expression was distorted, looking really haggard. I don't know what suddenly sucked the flesh away, leaving only the bones. With a "hulalala" sound the bones fell down. Before my paws was a white skeleton.

Although I'm an immortal, but I lived a peaceful life. I never saw someone who died so miserably. I was scared and gasped for air. Subconsciously I wanted to grab the Chu Kong in front of me. But he's a wild boar now, facing me with his behind. I exposed my sharp claws and carelessly hold onto Chu Kong's rough skin of his behind.

"There's a demon," I yelled.

Chu Kong also shouted: "Do you want me to drag you with my claws and dump you in the river of wine!"



“But there’s really a demon!”

I pointed with my claws at the hole in the wall and also pointed at the white skeleton near me.

“Before he dropped in front of me, he was eaten cleanly.”

Chu Kong no longer accused me. He turned around and looks at the pile of bones and said with a cold voice: “Now do you know what the two men were worshipping outside the cave?”

I shook my head.

“I don’t know.”

Chu Kong felt hopeless, looked at me and said: “Two people carrying three torches. There must’ve been three people. One of them entered the cave.”

Chu Kong pointed at the pile of bones with his hoof.

“This man turned into a sacrifice. They are worshipping with a living sacrifice for the....”

Chu Kong thought for a moment: “I don’t know who they are worshipping, but I can be sure that’s not an immortal from heaven. It’s full of yin air here, just like....”

Netherworld.

Chu Kong didn’t say it, but I could guess his meaning. My cultivation is still a bit less than him. At the beginning I didn’t detect the strange atmosphere in here. But now that Chu Kong has pointed it out, I could feel it. The cold air here is exactly like the netherworld.

Chu Kong explored everywhere and said: “The ground has yin. It must be connected to the netherworld. His voice turned deeper: “Seeing the two men like that before, this living sacrifice must be something very common.”

I wondered: “Accepting living sacrifices will harm the yin and will make it easy to fall into the evil ways. This is clearly prohibited. I didn’t hear any immortal from the netherworld is so daring.”

“Heng, an immortal doing something evil, will he dare to say it?”

Chu Kong said full of dislike: “What were you doing so many years in heaven? How come your head doesn’t have any common sense?”

I exposed my claws and said with a low voice: “If you speak like that to me again, I’ll scratch of the skin of your behind.”

Chu Kong shook his tail and continued: “The immortals of the netherworld aside from Yanwang and the magistrate, to treat them equally are prohibited from accepting sacrifices. In the netherworld is prohibited to kill. The ghosts working in the netherworld don’t have the ability to receive sacrifices, so they won’t ask for sacrifices, let alone living sacrifices. Aside from the ghosts, there’s also gods from the heaven in the netherworld. There are two possibilities why a god will go to the netherworld. First, like you and me, to end something. This sort will be a short stay. We don’t have the time nor the ability to receive sacrifices. As for the second possibility, must be a God who committed a great sin. He must go to the *eighteen floor*<sup>[1]</sup> of the netherworld to atone for his sins.”

My heart skipped a beat.

“Obviously the god is being punished in the netherworld, he still has the gall to do such a thing. This is sin with a sin. Which god doesn’t want to live anymore and dare to commit such a grave sin.....”

Chu Kong was silent for a moment. Then he said: “Yanwang should be informed about this matter as soon as possible.”

I nodded in agreement: “But we haven’t assessed the situation clearly yet.”

As I spoke, I walked toward the hole in the wall. I raised my head to get a clear view of it.

“I’ll look at it first.....”

“No!”

Chu Kong voice hasn’t reached my ears; I already put my head in the hole. There was nothing from the left to the right. There was

nothing above, below.....

A gold light suddenly flashed in the dark. I was still in shock, my breath stopped, when a cold wind came in my direction. The wind hit me straight into my face and pushed me backwards. With four legs in the air, I fell onto the ground.

"So painful," I shouted.

The running sound of a wild boar hooves sounded in the cave. Chu Kong stopped beside me. A nose rubbed my head.

"Where are you hurt?"

The cold air entered my nose. I couldn't tell what my heart was feeling. I only said blankly: "I don't know.....my backbone is painful."

Seeing that I was alright, Chu Kong stared at me blankly for a while. Suddenly he raged: "Try and be reckless again! How can you just go take a look?! Do you really think that now you can't die? See how you'll reincarnate when your soul is scattered!"

"Why are you angry? If my soul is scattered you won't need to spend a few more lifetimes with me. Shouldn't you be happy?"

I looked at him strangely. Seeing that he was stunned for a moment after hearing my question, I suddenly came to a realization. Reluctantly, I stood up and patted his head with my paw.

"I understand, I understand. You really like me."

"Like your butt."

"You don't need to cover it with words you don't mean."

"Cover your butt."

I helplessly sighed and shook my head.

"I know that I've too much charm. I'm a bit slow at this thing called love. Liking me must be really hard on you."

I paused.

“You can continue to work hard.”

Wild boar Kong’s throat made a low “gululu” sound. He howled angrily. He turned and got rid of the paw I put on his head. Angrily, he walked to the outside of the cave.

I reflected for a moment.

“What are you being shy about? Hey! In situations like this do you want me to chase after you, ah?! You should just say it. I said I was a little slow!”

I trotted behind him. Chu Kong couldn’t take it anymore. He turned around and yelled: “Xiaoye is going to commit suicide! You get away from me! You’re not allowed to die together with me!”

I think that after two lifetimes, I and Chu Kong became indifferent to death. Look at how easy and natural he said that he’ll commit suicide.

When we were at the opening of the cave, we saw that the place was lit with torches. I nodded my head: “I can foresee mu fur being stripped and sold. Your meat will be cooked as dinner.”

Outside the cave, there were dozens of men holding a variety of sticks, knives and torches.

It looks like the man who fled brought the whole village with him to kill a tiger.

“There’s also a wild boar!”

“It must be the food of the tiger.”

“It doesn’t look much like it ah.....

The strong men outside were discussing. I looked at their weapons. My heart made drums sound. These weapons looked so dull and old. I won’t die a painless and fast death. My backbone was still aching. I whispered at Chu Kong: “Can we change our way of dying?”

Chu Kong’s eyes swept over me. He said with dislike: “Xiaoye will

divert their attention. Run when you get the opportunity. Don't be so stupid that you can't even escape from a few humans."

After saying that, he pounded his hooves on the ground and ran into the direction with the most people. He rushed past them. The villagers flustered. Weapons begin to cut on Chu Kong's rough skin. But even if the skin is rough it still would be painful.....

He knows I'm afraid of death and afraid of pain, so he looked for opportunities for me to escape.....

Looking at his bulky body being besieged by a crowd was a funny picture. But I don't know what's the matter with my heart. It's like in the first lifetime when I saw Lu Hai Kong through the fire in the dog hole. That feeling is like the softest string in my heart being touched. I couldn't tell what this feeling felt like.

Perhaps deep in the arrogant celestial start Chu Kong, he's like Lu Hai Kong of that lifetime, hiding his gentle and considerate side. Once that side is revealed, it will attack and defeat me.

I know that he's seeking death. I also know that maybe he's looking for a way to end our few lifetimes together. But once my head turned warm, I stopped everyone with a howl. I rushed forward and pressed the most powerful man hitting Chu Kong to the ground. I roared in front of his face. The brawny man was scared and began to shake.

Being a tiger, I was very proud. But it didn't last long. There were too many people. After a while I was exhausted and lay on the ground. I glanced at wild boar Kong. His eyes were white. Apparently he must be already on the road to the netherworld. I sighed. Impulse ah impulse. Giving up a life of a tiger in vain. Weapons went into my bones. Being killed as an animal, I died more miserably than any other lifetimes.....

---

## Notes

1. *The Eighteenth Floor:*

*Name: Chamber of Saw*

*Function: Those who exploit the loopholes in the law to cheat and engage in malpractice in business will find themselves being sawed into half.*

*<http://www.cvltnation.com/the-eighteen-layers-of-chinese-hell/>*

## Chapter 22

---

I'm already so familiar with the road to the netherworld that I don't need the soul collectors anymore. We arrived very fast.

In the netherworld I saw Chu Kong talking with one of the ghosts. I approached them and hear him say faintly: "I must trouble you to inform Yanwang that I've something important to see him about."

Seems like he didn't come down for too long.

The ghost who is half the size of Chu Kong nodded. He was about to go when he saw me. His dark face turned even darker. He took a few steps back and shouted: "They have come again! They have come again! They'll face each other again!"

The netherworld is a silent place. When he shouted the whole netherworld stopped with what they are doing. The ghosts working in the netherworld and the souls that was about to be reincarnated, all scattered away, leaving me and Chu Kong standing there awkwardly. I bit my lips and silently wiped the cold sweat off my forehead. In my heart, I was thinking that I and Chu Kong standing here together must've given them a trauma.....

I was lamenting when Chu Kong looked at me. He narrowed his eyes dangerously: "Didn't I tell you to look for an opportunity to escape? How come you're so stupid?!"

I didn't want to explain all the feelings in my heart to him. I said: "Is it comfortable living wearing fur? I don't give a damn about being a tiger demon."

I walked straight to Yanwang's palace.

"After we informed Yanwang about that issue when we have to drink the soup of oblivion, we'll drink the soup of oblivion. When we have to reincarnate, we'll go reincarnate. I don't care anymore how Heavenly emperor Lee will arrange it in the next lifetime. I don't want to waste my effort fighting with you anymore. I'm worn out."

I walked to Yanwang's palace for a while and didn't hear Chu Kong's cynicism. I also didn't hear the sound of footsteps behind me. Curiously, I looked back and saw Chu Kong looking at me blankly. I wondered: "Don't you need to go to Yangwang's palace? Come."

Chu Kong blinked and it seemed like that his soul returned back to his body. He said arrogantly: "Heng, of course xiaoye knows what he has to do. Who wants you to remind me?"

I squeezed my fist. This guy really.....control my anger, control my anger.

I didn't bother with him anymore. In my heart, I felt that letting him off the hook once in a while is no big deal.

After pushing the big and heavy door open, I walked into Yanwang's palace. The thing that surprised me the most today is that Yanwang is not asleep on his desk, but he is writing in a book in all seriousness. The magistrate beside is looking at him. Looking at Yanwang his veins on his forehead were about to pop.

"Yanwang."

I bowed full of respect.

"I'm here again."

Yanwang raised his head and looked at me. His eyes brightened up: "Oh! Xiao Xiang Zi! Good, good, you're here again? Didn't celestial Chu Kong come?"

His face was full of excitement. Until, he saw Chu Kong walked into the palace, did he nod. He put down his brush and said: "You came just in time. Just now, the heaven sent me a letter."

Yanwang leaned back on his back chair. He patted the armchair with his left hand and looked at me and Chu Kong smilingly.

I was scared seeing him smiling like that. I took a few steps back. At this time Chu Kong stepped in front of me and covered me with half of his body. He asked: "What did the letter from heaven say?"

"It's for the two of you."



Yanwang picked up the letter.

“Well, before I read this letter, don’t you two have to fight first?”

I bit my lips. Being a Yanwang must be really boring. How come he always likes for me and Chu Kong to create a mess in the netherworld?

Seeing that we are ignoring, he sulked: “Alright, this letter is from Heavenly emperor Lee. He said that what you did in the human world and in the netherworld is just too much. All the fates that he has written none of it has come out. In the first lifetime, the wrong person died. In the second lifetime, the fate he has written completely changed. In the third lifetime, well, he hasn’t finished writing yet, but you already came down. All of that made him discouraged. He has a lot more white hairs now.”

Hearing Yangwang saying that, I felt a little sorry for big bearded Lee.

“So Heavenly emperor Lee said in this letter that in the next lifetime, you must live in the human world for twenty years. Otherwise, when you come down to the netherworld again, you are handed over to me for punishment.”

Yanwang giggled for a while.

“I can foresee that you won’t be able to live for twenty years.”

Hey....with what kind of mentality is this guy using to be a Yangwang, ah?

Yanwang laughed heartily: “You, two immortals know that working as a Yanwang is very suffocating. It’s very rare to have a chance to punish people in whatever way I want..... heiheihei hei. You see, I’ve already written down how to punish people.”

I took a closer look. Once I saw it, I was startled and cursed: “Damn you.”

Chu Kong who was in front of me was also startled: “Fuck you.”

*Let funny Yanwang laugh ten times.*

*Massage Yanwang's back ten times.*

*Kiss Yanwang's cheeks ten times.....*

What the fuck are these?!

So it turned out that just then he was writing this kind of thing so seriously. No wonder the magistrate's face was twitching.

Yanwang looked at the ceiling with a face full of hope.

"You two try to come down earlier."

I rubbed my forehead. Chu Kong in front of me also rubbed his forehead. He was silent for a while, and then he hid all his emotions and said with a serious face: "Yanwang, serious information."

He took two steps forward.

"This time, we saw a cave in the human world connected with the netherworld. Someone is receiving living sacrifices there."

When Yanwang heard that his face turned a shade darker. All the funny and happy expression disappeared from his face.

"Where is the specific place?"

"On the area at the foot of Hua Mountain. If the netherworld hasn't received any souls who came because they died from being a living sacrifice.....That means that the one who is accepting living sacrifices also eats their souls. This is the road to transform into a demon. We need to inform heaven as soon as possible to let them make early preparations."

Yanwang nodded and thought for a while. The magistrate beside him said: "I'll go take a look at the eighteen floor."

Knowing that it's something serious, the magistrate didn't dare to delay and rushed out. Yanwang sat for a while, but he seemed impatient. He rushed after the magistrate. While he was running, he said: "You two don't need to worry about this matter. Go reincarnate."

I looked at Chu Kong and Chu Kong also looked at me.

“What are you staring blankly at? So stupid,” Chu Kong said coldly. “Didn’t you wish to go reincarnate? Go.”

“What are you being angry about? I didn’t say I won’t go.”

I turned and walked out of Yanwang’s palace.

The netherworld doesn’t have many staff. There is less staff now that Yanwang pulled ten ghosts to go together with him. Now there’s only one ghost left who overlooked the drinking of the soup of oblivion. This ghost looked somewhat dull.....

The vicious part of my heart came rolling out. I suddenly want to do something evil. I remembered the lifetime where I didn’t remember anything and the suffering of being controlled by someone; I suddenly felt that what Heavenly emperor Lee’s discourage can stay far away from me.

I lifted my skirt and was about to took the bowl of soup when suddenly Chu Kong’s voice came from behind me: “Hey, Xiao Xiang Zi, let’s discuss.”

I turned and looked at him. He pointed at that ghost: “We deceive him and neither of us will drink the soup of oblivion. After the reincarnation, we can continue with what you said in the previous lifetime. Draw a clear line and never come in contact with each other.”

Hearing this, I don’t know why my heart felt empty. I blinked and froze for a moment. Then I said: “Good, Good ah, of course it’s good.”

Chu Kong stared at me for a while. Then he grazed my shoulder and went straight to the ghost. He took a bowl of soup. I didn’t know what tricks Chu Kong is playing, so I kept up with him and also took a bowl of soup.

Chu Kong held the bowl of soup with one hand, but he didn’t rush to drink it. With the other hand he pulled out a round bead and said: “Heaven has only one of this bead. It has great power. I can’t bring it

with me to the human world. When Yanwang come back a while later, help me give it to him.”

I looked at the one and only bead from heaven, which has great power and bit my lips. Are you sure that this isn't the broken stone you picked up from the road just now?

Chu Kong handed the bead to the ghost, but his hand slipped. The round bead fell onto the ground and rolled far away. The ghost thought that this is a great responsibility entrusted to him by the great celestial star, so he quickly chased after the bead.

Chu Kong turned sideways and threw the soup in the river of forgetfulness. In my heart, I spurned his bullying behavior. I also turned and threw the soup in the river of forgetfulness, letting it follow the flow of the river.

When the ghost came back, he scratched his head and apologized to Chu Kong for not finding the bead. Chu Kong waved and said with an inscrutable look: “Forget it, forget it, it's destiny.”

A stone rolled into a pile of stone. If it can be found then that's real destiny.....

After crossing the bridge, we arrived at the side of the reincarnation well. I looked in the well which is separated by the yin and yang world.

I thought suddenly flashed: “Chu Kong, I think that any accident can happen to our bodies. Drawing the line and never contacting each other is a bit unreal. Let's point the important point out.”

Chu Kong looked at me sideways. I said solemnly: “In the next lifetime, you better be reborn as a woman.”

His eyes narrowed dangerously.

“Xiao Xiang Zi, let's change our ways,” he said. “Simply go and reincarnate as a man. You have a fierce heart. In the next lifetime your body and mind can achieve unity. It will also let us avoid forming any feelings. Would it not be better this way?”

“I will not be a man. I can’t get accustomed to a man’s body.”

Chu Kong hmfed coldly: “Funny, xiaoye, a hot blooded man can get accustomed to a woman’s body?”

When he speaks to me with such a tone, it’ll stir up my emotions. I took a deep breath and forced myself to calm down: “Alright, let’s just go our separate ways.”

I stepped onto the well of reincarnation and was prepared to jump when something grabbed my shoulder. It’s Chu Kong grabbing my shoulder and pushing me to the yang side. He wanted me to reincarnate as a downright man.

“Damn you!”

How could I let myself suffer such a big loss? I followed Chu Kong moves and grabbed his neck and pushed him to the yin side.

In the chaos while we were tugging back and forth, I don’t know in what position I fell into the well. But I remembered; before the darkness fell, my heart suddenly run out of breath, befuddling my whole body.....

## Chapter 23

---

My heart felt like it was torn apart. This is a phenomenon that I didn't experience in the previous reincarnations. Is it that....in this lifetime, I'll suffer from a heart disease? A sick lady struggling to catch the young master and finally died from heart pain. That plot flashed through my mind.

I opened my eyes and saw a beautifully carved rosewood bed. It seems that I reincarnated into a rich family. I saw that on the bed mantle was a phoenix embroidered with golden threads. Ah.....I might've been reincarnated into the royal family in this lifetime.

The pain in my chest kept getting stronger. I couldn't help myself from touching it. I was taken aback and gasped for air. What is this?!

There was a sharp dagger stuck in my chest! What alarmed me more is my chest. Why is it so flat? Why is this hand so large? Above it's covered with calluses. Where did my nice white hand go? Even if it's not a nice white hand, where did the little hand of a child go? This is obviously a hand of a rough man!

I struggled to get up. I felt a sharp pain in my chest. It bled more making my head feel dizzy. Do I have to die after just being reincarnated?

".....In the next lifetime, you must live in the human world for twenty years. Otherwise when you come down to the netherworld, you're handed over to me for punishment."

Yanwang words kept ringing in my ears. When thinking about the punishment that was written on the paper, it felt like something stuck deeper in my heart than the dagger. I was trembling in pain.

No.....although I'm not quite sure what the situation is now, but I've been only a few moments in this world. I can't die like this! If I go back to the netherworld so soon.....the rest of my life will be ruined. Definitely ruined!

I hold the dagger and tried to pull it out. I struggled endlessly with it. Suddenly, I heard another voice. I turned and looked. It's a round faced woman wearing elegant clothes. Her face was really pale. With a "wa" sound she spit out a mouthful of black blood. It seemed like she's been poisoned.

This.....this, what sort of situation is this now? A rich woman and a rough man lying together. The rough man has a dagger stuck in his chest, the woman was poisoned. Fuck! In what sort of mess am I caught?

"Fuck! What is this situation?!"

The woman in elegant clothes looked at me and I was shocked. When she finished talking, she clutched her chest and vomited.

An ominous feeling crossed my heart again. I asked breathlessly: "Chu...Chu Kong?"

When the sound escaped my mouth, I heard it's a deep voice. I secretly wiped my bitter tears.

When the lady raised her head, she looked at me in horror.

"Xiao Xiang Zi?"

Her lips trembled: "Damn, damn damn you.....always haunting me."

"Haunt, huhu, the one who is haunting me is you! Hear me clearly, you're not allowed to get close to me!"

After saying those words, I was out of breath. I seemed to have seen Yanwang waving at me.

"Who.....who still wants to get close to you. Xiaoye, xiaoye will save this life first. Go back to the netherworld yourself. Go, go kiss that little round face of Yanwang."

I shivered. This really is a good reason to let me use my greatest power and courage to continue living.

I tightened my hand, gritted my teeth and pulled with all my strength. The part of the dagger came out, but there's still a part plugged in

my chest. More blood flowed out.

I cursed angrily: "Which bastard stabbed me? Is there gold in my chest, ah?"

The side where Chu Kong was lying on the bed trembled. While spitting blood, he climbed out of the bed and struggled to get to the table. He grabbed the teapot on the table and began to drink water. He didn't drink for long when the water in the teapot was gone.

Chu Kong also flew into a rage. He raised his hand and knocked all that was on the table onto the ground.

"Poor bastard! Your home doesn't even have water to drink!"

When we were caught in this mess, suddenly someone opened the door of this haunted house.

"General!"

A man wearing clothes in light colors walked towards me.

"General! How come this happened?!"

Two maids came running towards Chu Kong's side.

"A! Princess! Princess, are you alright?!"

I didn't have any more strength to answer and also didn't have more energy to think about it. I only blinked and deep in my heart, I kept cursing at them. I and that princess are alright or not...don't you have eyes to see it.....

When I woke up again, the dagger was pulled out of my chest. The wound was bandaged. The man in clothes with light colors was kneeling at my bed. He kept his head down and didn't say anything.

I coughed twice and wanted to sit up. That man immediately came to help me. After helping me, he went back and knelt down again. I wondered: "What are you doing?"

"This servant didn't protect you well. General, please punish me."

I scratched my head. I wanted to say that I still don't know what



situation this is, but seeing a heroic man kneeling in front of me, I didn't have the heart to tell him that your master already died. I'm just a weak woman who came to this body. I coughed twice and asked: "That, Chu, well.....where is princess?"

The man kneeling on the floor suddenly rose.

"Why would general still worry about her?! That Qingling princess harmed Xinyun lady and tried to murder general. She's very vicious. General shouldn't tolerate her behavior anymore! This servant asks general to report this matter to the emperor. Even if the empress dowager is protecting Qingling princess, she also can't ignore the crime of trying to murder a husband!"

I touched my nose. In my heart, I thought: So this story is a love triangle. Princess likes general. General married the princess, but likes another woman. In a moment of anger, princess murdered the woman and murdered the general. Hey... this isn't right. How did she get poisoned? Could it be that after murdering the husband, she was in despair and tried to murder herself?

I didn't speak and the man said: "General! You shouldn't tolerate Qingling princess anymore!"

I pouted. Even if you're tearfully complaining, I wouldn't have a way ah. Because now in that body is celestial star Chu Kong and not that Qingling princess. Besides I don't know about this situation yet and I can't foresee the consequences. I'm also not familiar with my surroundings and I don't know the people. Also in this lifetime, I don't have power and I need to live for twenty years. If I go against this Qingling princess right now, if Chu Kong died then it's alright, but if he doesn't die, I wouldn't know how he'll get back at me! This is a risk I can't take. I and Chu Kong can be said to be in the same situation right now. Before we get a clear vision of this matter, I must not fight with him.

I waved my hand and said: "You can retire, I'll think about this matter."

Although the man had an unwilling expression, he didn't dare to go against me. He gritted his teeth and respectfully answered: "Yes."

I felt that ordering people around was a pretty good feeling. Suddenly, outside the door was noisy.

“Princess, you can’t ah! Now you still can’t get out of bed!”

“Even if princess wants to see the general, it could wait! Take care of your body!”

“Princess! Princess!”

My servant’s face changed color.

“Hang, this Qinglin princess really went too far! General, this servant will go drive her away.”

“Wait!”

I hurried yelled after him.

“That, cough, it doesn’t matter, let her come in.”

“General!”

“Let her come in.”

“Yes……”

Before the servant let her in, Chu Kong wearing elegant clothes, kicked the door open. She walked in. Her face was still pale, but it was better than the day she vomited blood.

“General?”

She smiled coldly and waved with her hands.

“Aside from the one lying in bed, all the other people get out.”

My servant’s hand turned into a fist.

“Qinglin princess, you!”

“My head hurts, you all get out.”

After I opened my mouth, that man gritted his teeth and went out.”

After the door closed, in the room there’re only me and Chu Kong

left.

“You’d better be able to explain this situation!”

Chu Kong sat on my bed and stared at me ferociously.

I expressed my frustration: “If I know what situation this is, then it’ll be good.”

# Chapter 24

---

Chu Kong seemed like he wanted to crush me to death.

“I told you to obediently reincarnate as a male. If you didn’t struggle, we wouldn’t be in this mess!”

“I told you to reincarnate as a woman. Why didn’t you reincarnate as a woman, ah?!”

I refuted him and continued: “If you didn’t want to take advantage of me, would we be in this state?!”

“Funny, who was the one who came up with this bad idea? You want to put all the shit (blame) on xiaoye’s head?”

“Who cares about putting shit on your head! Don’t waste the fertilizer!”

Chu Kong said furiously: “You, a woman, can you talk more vulgar than this?”

I was also furious: “If you’re like Lu Hai Kong, would I be able to talk so vulgar? You still have the nerve to criticize me like you are talking really nicely!”

“A, you dare to compare with me? If you’re obediently like silly Xiang, would I be able to get angry at you?”

After those words left his mouth, I couldn’t say anything against it. Chu Kong also went silent. The room was silent for a long time. Chu Kong gritted his teeth, hmpfed coldly and sat down on my bed. I was going to ignore him, but seeing a beauty sitting with open legs beside me was a weird and funny sight. When I looked down and saw my flat and broad chest, I let out a deep sigh. I sighed, Chu Kong also sighed. After letting out another sigh, I said: “But no matter how we’ve reincarnated, we should’ve been reborn as a baby. This mess.....Also not giving me the slightest bit of time to adapt, what the hell is this?!”

Chu Kong turned. We looked at each other for a while. Almost at the same time, we let out a low curse: "Damn that Heavenly emperor Lee!"

I scratched my head irritably.

"What do we do now? One is a general, the other is a princess. They're married and living in the same house. How can we draw a line like this and never contact each other, ah?"

After Chu Kong heard that, his expression slowly turned angry. He raised his one brow and said: "That's right."

He pondered while touching his chin: "Twenty years....."

I frowned: "Yes ah, we need to live our ass for at least twenty years. After the reincarnation, I nearly died, how will I survive, ah?!"

Chu Kong thought for a while, suddenly looked up at me and said: "Xiao Xiang Zi, let's make a deal."

After I heard him say that, I subconsciously frowned. Every time we make a deal, the results are never what we expected. Messy accidents always happen. I asked: "What do you want to do?"

"Let's work together for a while."

He looked really arrogant.

"Now we don't know the situation around us yet. We can make other plans after we get to the bottom of this. "

Although he's saying that, his expression looked like he was doing me a favor. I restrained my dissatisfaction and asked: "How do we work together?"

"Really stupid," Chu Kong said dissatisfied and glanced at me.

"We need to live for twenty years in the human realm. If we want to keep our lives there're two things that we shouldn't touch. One is the *jianghu*<sup>[1]</sup>, second is the temple. Needless to say about the jianghu. Bandits all over the place and spilling too much blood. All day long they kill without reason. It's unsafe. As for the temple, I'm alright, but

you.....”

He smiled. It's obvious to ridicule me.

“I'm afraid you won't be able to survive for two months.”

I clenched my fist.

“Playing politics is really tiring. Besides, it's the royal politics. Xiaoye doesn't want to let that muddy water dirty myself. So after we get to the bottom of this situation, let's go away. Deep in the forest is a safe place. I don't believe that heaven can get us killed with a knife there.”

I nodded and said: “Stupid, if you want to know this situation, then just get someone and ask.”

He smiled coldly: “Do you know what our identities are?! If we want to continue living, we can't let someone figure us out. If we get accused of being demons and dragged out to be burned, then even if you cry it'll be too late.”

“Really?”

I yelled: “Come in!”

Immediately my loyal servant pushed the door open. He alertly glanced at Chu Kong. He knelt on the ground.

“General.”

I nodded and said in a strict way: “You, tell her who I am!”

The servant said seriously: “I answer the general. General is one of those personally appointed by the previous emperor to protect the country. Now you're the great general. At fifteen years you battled with the enemies. At eighteen you raided the camps with your troops. Among the people, you took the head of the Xiongnu prince! At twenty-three you defeated the Xiongnu tribe. This is something that couldn't be done in the last fifty years!”

I nodded: “Great, now you tell her what her identity is.”

He glanced at Chu Kong and looked down: “The emperor's sister.”

I raised an eyebrow. This is a perfect marriage match. The man is brave, the woman is beautiful. A fate gifted by the heavens. How did they become an estranged couple.....I suddenly remembered the day I and Chu Kong fought at Yue Lao temple. That time ended a lot of fates.....

On my back there was some cold sweat. I coughed twice and asked: "You say, do I treat the princess good or bad?"

My loyal servant glanced at me strangely, but seeing my serious look he replied: "General treats the princess.....courteous."

Well, it seems like this general doesn't treat the princess really well.

"How does the princess treat me?"

The servant was loss for words. It was silent for a moment when suddenly a girl rushed in. I remembered that it was the girl who kept asking Chu Kong if he was well on the day he vomited blood.

The girl knelt on the ground and kowtowed three times on the floor. Then she raised her tearful face and cried: "This slave is audacious. This slave knows her place and knows that this slave doesn't have the right to say this. But today general is asking such questions, making the princess lose face! The princess always treats general with sincerity. The heaven can be the witness! How can general completely not know how the princess treats general?! Normally, the princess won't let the servants say it, but today, if this slave continue to keep silent then the princess will be wronged for her whole life!"

My ears are waiting for her next sentence. Chu Kong is also looking at her quietly. The girl saw that no one was stopping her; she was surprised for a moment. Then she said: "The stumble of Xinyun lady is not caused by the princess. Her miscarriage also wasn't caused by the princess! Her self-directed play was to swindle general. None of this is the princess' fault, why does general want to punish the princess?! General only knows that that Xinyun lady has general's child. But does general knows that the princess is also expecting general's child?!"

A bolt hit me and Chu Kong. I felt that the world is really blank. I

turned around and looked at Chu Kong. His eyes were widened. There was an extremely rare expression of being surprised on his face. He stared at the girl kneeling on the ground: "You..... you....."

The girl kept crying: "Princess! Do not continue to keep the general in the dark! This slave knows your heart is in pain, but why don't you say it to the general?! Why do you carry the burden alone? This is actually.....Even if princess is not thinking about yourself, you need to think about your unborn child. What wrong did he do?! And now we don't even know if the poison has harmed the fetus. Princess really shouldn't make it difficult for yourself!"

Chu Kong face turned paler. The two words "unborn child" and "fetus" poked on our nerves. My eyes rolled and fall onto Chu Kong's belly.....There is "my"child? In Chu Kong's belly? I felt that this lifetime is ridiculously absurd.

"I.....I'm.....pregnant?"

Chu Kong was pale and his eyes looked disorganized. He rubbed his forehead. It seemed like he was forcing himself to calm down.

"This isn't right. Something must've gone wrong."

He stood up. While he kept repeating those words, he walked to the door. The girl kneeling on the ground was about to stand up and follow him, when he yelled: "Stop! Kneel! You're not allowed to move!"

His mind must be extremely confused right now.

"I'll have to calm down.....need to calm down."

Actually, getting to know this, my shock isn't less than that of Chu Kong's. But it happened on Chu Kong's body. While thinking about that, that sad reminder turned into delight (she's happy that it didn't happen on her body).

I asked the girl kneeling on the ground: "How long has she been pregnant?"



“About three months.....”

“Nonsense,”my loyal servant yelled. “Three months ago the general didn’t come back much to the mansion! How can Qingling princess get pregnant?”

“This slave swears that every word this slave has spoken is the truth,”the girl immediately retorted. “Three months ago, there was one time when the general was drunk. He slept in the princess’ room.....After knowing that she was pregnant, the princess wanted to immediately tell the general, but the general was with Xinyun lady everyday.....The princess is a proud and arrogant person.....”

I nodded and sighed in my heart. Perhaps the real princess would never tell the general. The real general also would never know that he has a child, letting Chu Kong get such a big advantage.....

Suddenly, I want to see what kind of expression Chu Kong will have while he’s in labor (evil her).

---

## Notes

1. 江湖 (jiānghú): the world of those who knows martial arts.

## Chapter 25

---

After Chu Kong got the news that he's pregnant, I didn't know where he ran off to. I was in bed all day long. Suddenly, I felt that even if I can't figure anything else out, I need to get to know the place I'm living at. I endured the pain in my chest, lifted the quilt, wore some clothes and went outside.

When I opened the door, I saw my servant, who has been guarding outside the door. When he saw me, he said: "General, your wound isn't healed yet. You need a lot of rest."

I cleared my throat and said with a serious look: "Tired of lying in bed for so long. I'm going for a walk."

"So, that was it. Let this servants make the arrangements for general....."

I rubbed my chest. In my heart I thought that humans really have many problems. Will I die if I walk a few steps with this injury? I waved and said: "No need, just lit a few lanterns for me will be good."

This servant really respects the former general. Although on the surface, he hesitated, but he didn't dare say anything. He only lit the lanterns for me.

"Where does general want to go?"

I rolled my eyes: "A quiet place."

He walked quietly in front of me and took me through many confusing turns before we stood outside the wall of the garden. I nodded and said: "You wait here; I want to walk by myself."

He naturally has no objection. I went into the garden alone. I regretted it immediately. It's really quiet here. There isn't the slightest noise. Because it was night, I couldn't see anything. Only a pond shone in the moonlight.

Wait, wait.....who is that person standing near the pond?

I narrowed my eyes to take a closer look and was shocked. That's actually the princess with Chu Kong's soul! What....what is he doing? Could it be that it was a too big blow for him and he wanted to commit suicide? This can't happen! If he dies, wouldn't it be more difficult for me to fight alone?!

"Princess Kong! You're not allowed to jump!"

I shouted: "You need to love every life!"

Chu Kong faintly turned around to look at me: "Ah?"

The power of words is not always useful. I rushed to him and hugged his waist. I held her tightly in my embrace and said: "You calm down a bit. We can talk!"

"What are you doing?!"

The person in my arms kept struggling. But now he is a woman, he isn't strong as me, a rough man. I let him punch me a few times on my broad chest, then I let go of him. I grasped his shoulder and shook severely. His whole person seems to be falling apart with my shake. His body went soft and I held him by his waist and said with a pained voice: "I know that you feel wronged, but you can't treat yourself like this. Besides.....you're someone who's pregnant!"

Chu Kong trembled in my arms: "You....."

My ears were carefully listening to his words. He raised his fist and severely hit me in my face. While I was distracted, he took advantage and pushes me away. He pointed at my nose and scolded: "You fucking bastard, don't get too deep into your character!"

I rubbed my face. Because of the gap between our physiques, his fist didn't cause me much damage. I can understand his feelings, so I didn't fuss with him about that fist.

I stared at Chu Kong for a very long time, before I asked: "You didn't want to commit suicide?"

“Suicide, your ass!”

He was stomping angrily.

“Do you think I’m anxiously wanting to rush down and be affectionate with Yanwang?! Am xiaoye, I, stupid?!”

I pointed at the pond and asked: “Then what were you doing?”

Chu Kong immediately paled and seemed to aged a thousand years.

“I was thinking that it was hard to disobey the life bestowed by the heavens. Heavenly emperor Lee has a hard heart and a black hand.”

I was speechless and stayed silent together with him.

“That...,” I hesitated. “That child, do you still want it?”

Chu Kong’s thin shoulder flickered. I looked up. My eyes were fluttering.

“Actually, I really want to see you bear children....After all, parenthood is something that I’m experiencing for the first time.”

Chu Kong’s shoulders shook uncontrollably. I seemed to be hearing a “gege” sound coming from his gritted teeth.

I made a “haha” sound and said: “Of course, the woman should call the shots on this matter.”

The words just left my mouth, when a stone severely hit my head. My head felt dizzy, I staggered two steps and fell on the ground. My chest felt painful, I felt warm blood flowing out. I dazedly touched it. In the moonlight, I saw my hand full of blood. I gasped: “Help, help! I don’t want to see Yanwang!”

Chu Kong was also scared. He stared at me blankly and then rushed to my side. He kneeled beside me.

“Is all alright?”

His hand covered my wound. It seems like he wants to heal my wound with a spell. But he covered for a while, not even a fart did come out. Chu Kong face went green: “Go to die these mortals!”

I grabbed his hand: "You can't say the word "die"! Twenty years haven't passed yet!"

A sound came from Chu Kong's throat. He tightly shut his mouth. He dug in his sleeve and pulled out a silk handkerchief. He covered my chest with the handkerchief. I have no other way, so I obediently let him put the handkerchief on my chest and waited for the bleeding to stop.

The moonlight is so bright. I can clearly see Chu Kong's frowned eyebrows. The breeze of the wind is so slow; I can hear two mortals without power breathing together. They're so close to each other. In my mind many vague and clear imaged flashed. There's Lu Hai Kong looking up at me and quietly smiling. There's also Chu Kong patting silly Xiang to sleep. I came to the realization that this is the first time that we've been in harmony with each other and helping each other.

"Hey....."

"Hey."

We spoke at the same time and also at the same time we went silent.

"Alright, you can go first."

"You go first....."

We went silent again and looked at each other. Chu Kong took a deep breath and said: ".....I'm sorry."

My breath stifled. I immediately looked at the moon, to see if somebody has put a fake moon in the sky. What surprised me was that the moon was real. What's more surprising is that Chu Kong just apologized to me.....is also true!

I was dumbfounded.

Chu Kong's eyes flashed and he seemed to be thinking about something really far away: "In the second lifetime, although slaughtering Yang family wasn't my intention, but I didn't get in time to stop it. When I arrived, Shengling sect has already finished the

job. After that I didn't tell you the truth, perhaps I also....."

"Wait," I interrupted him. "You apologized for this?"

Chu Kong raised an eyebrow: "Then for what did you think?"

My heart roared. Shouldn't he apologize for beating a woman regularly? Shouldn't he apologize for causing me to spend seven lifetimes with him?! Shouldn't he apologize for all the mean things he did to me? He isn't even apologizing for causing my wound to bleed again. Just for.....

He did so many things to me and he specifically held onto that one!

I understood and nodded: "You like that type, ah. You actually like fools!"

Surprisingly, Chu Kong wasn't angry when he heard that. He stared at me for a while. His eyes continued to drift away.

"Heng, don't you also like that type? That fool called Lu Hai Kong. Besides, he's a blind one."

This sentence made a nerve in my heart move. I forgot my chest was still bleeding. I didn't feel pain and grabbed Chu Kong by his collar, forcing him to look at me. I looked at him and said seriously and solemnly: "You listen to me clearly. Lu Hai Kong is not stupid. His eyes were not good, but his vision is better than anyone's. His heart is clearer than anyone. Don't say any bad things about him."

Chu Kong looked at me in daze. In his black pupil was my face, which has been turned white by the moonlight. After a long time, he said: "You really, really....."

I felt that there was nothing to hide. Besides, Lu Hai Kong already died. He died in Chu Kong's past. I nodded and looked straight at Chu Kong: "That's right, I like him, really like him."

After saying that, my eyes turned sad. Unfortunately, in this world, there won't be anyone who'll treat me as good as Lu Hai Kong anymore. I also will not experience heartache again or like a person again.

After organizing my emotions, I looked up again. The moment I looked at Chu Kong, I was dumbfounded. His face was red, even his ears were a bit red.

I was surprised: “Hey.....”

“Shut....Shut up!”

Chu Kong threw the bloodstained handkerchief angrily at me. He stood up and took a few steps back.

“Xiaoye.....xiaoye doesn’t want to hear you speak!”

He turned and ran with a shy expression.

I blinked my eyes. I was still in daze when I saw blood flowing out of my chest. I turned pale. I picked up the handkerchief quickly and blocked the wound, while I struggled to walk to the door of the garden.

I was calling: “Help! Help!”

I haven’t seen Chu Kong give birth yet, how could I go kiss Yanwang’s cheek! Heavenly emperor Lee, how can I be willing to go?!

After the night in the garden, I barely escaped death. Time flies. In a blink of eye, two months have passed. In these two months, my wound is almost healed. I also have a better understanding of my surroundings. I know that my name is Chu Qinghui. He relied on his outstanding military skills to get the position of general. My loyal servant is called Chu Yi. He is the general’s right hand. Qingling princess’s name is Fu Ying. She is the emperor’s younger sister, the most favored daughter of the empress dowager.

The bad fate of the princess and the general began when the general turned from a soldier to a general. The general went to the palace to receive the grace. The princess got a glimpse of the general. She didn’t want to marry anyone if it’s not the general. The emperor wrote a decree and the general was forced to marry her.

And then there’s the woman whom the general promised his life to.

It's that lady named Xinyun, whom my servant mentioned that day. That lady is a female physician and had saved the general's life. The general and she have deep affection for each other. However, because the emperor had ordered, he had to marry the princess. But the general couldn't sever the ties with Xinyun lady. He doesn't come home as a way to protest against the emperor's order. Every day he lived in the house of Xinyun lady. Later, Xinyun lady got pregnant with the general's child, but miscarried. It is said that the princess caused it. In the end did the princess did it still remains an open question.

Xinyun has lost the child is a reality. The general vent his anger on the princess, not knowing that the princess was also pregnant. The proud princess couldn't tolerate such a failed marriage and chose to die together with the general.

This is what I learned that happened. But I still have many doubts. I always felt that things aren't as simple as they seem on the surface.

I and Chu Kong's goal is to get rid of our current status of royalty and nobles. Then we'll go hide in the forest. But under the current circumstances, the princess is pregnant, the general had an affair. The princess' brother surely will not let us leave. Besides the affairs of the court is not so easy to understand as the affairs of my own home. To get rid of the identity of princess and general is really hard.

I sat in the pavilion. I watched the autumn scenery, drink a gulp of wine and sighed. The servant Chu Yi, who stood beside me, immediately poured wine into my empty cup. I nodded in satisfaction. Aside that the situation is not yet clear, my life is still quite pleasant. No worries about eating and drinking. There are many people who serve me. It's better than the days in the first lifetime.

I glanced at Chu Yi. I thought that after I go into seclusion and still want to live a free life, I need to find a way to deceive this guy to go with me. Fetching water and firewood, cook, watching over the house; he can do it all. If I deceive him some more, I may even not have to pay him wage. This is really a perfect plan. I need to draw him to me now.



I coughed twice: "Chu Yi, sit. Drink a couple of wine with me."

Chu Yi was surprised: "This servant doesn't dare."

"Sit. You're a close brother. We should not bother about or status. If I have a cup of wine in the future, you'll also have a cup of wine."

"General....."

Chu Yi was about to continue speaking, when a guard came and said apologetically: "General, Xinyun lady asked to see you."

By the way, I almost forgot. In this love triangle there still one person alive. This Xinyun lady is still alive and is now asking to see the general. Presumably she had not seen him for many days and began to miss him.....

I am a little worried. To speak words of love to a woman; isn't that difficult for me? I can only nod: "Let her come in."

The guard hesitated slightly: "But.....the princess also seems to be walking in the direction to the garden....."

Chu Yi immediately said: "General, should I go and bring Xinyun lady to the inner room?"

I reckon that Chu Kong will not fight with a woman and get jealous, so I waved and said: "Do I need to dodge her? Let them all in."

There was a chill autumn wind in the pavilion. I drank a few mouthfuls of wine. A woman in pink clothing knelt in front of me. This is presumably the girl called Xinyun. But when lovers meet, why is she kneeling.....

I stared at her for a long time. She bowed her head and didn't speak. I touched my face and wondered if I have put a too serious expression. I curved my lips and said laughingly: "Arise."

Xinyun began to tremble. She bowed and shuddered: "General..... this concubine....."

Hearing those two titles, I was a little surprised. It seems that the general did see Xinyun lady as a wife, but he is also strict about

status.

I waved my hand and said: "You rise up first."

Xinyun looked up at me. Her eyes seemed to want to look through me.

"General.....will you not punish me?"

There's an inside story!

I raised an eyebrow and make an inscrutable expression: "What wrong did you commit?"

Xinyun buried her head and pondered for a while. Slowly she stood up.

"General."

She softly called me and sat on the chair beside me.

"This concubine missed general for many days. Today....."

She blushed.

"Missing turned into more missing. In desperation, I asked to see general. If it embarrassed general, please order a punishment."

I scratched my head and was about to tell her to not keep putting it all on me while speaking, when I heard someone hmpfed coldly. I looked up and saw Chu Kong walked into the garden with several maids. I looked at him blankly. After that day, I felt that Chu Kong was always avoiding me. It's not easy to see him. Now that I'm staring at him, I don't know why, he suddenly blushed.....

## Chapter 26

---

Chu Kong was blushing on that side, but he didn't hide from me. Slowly, he walked towards us. I drank a cup of wine and looked at everyone's expression. Xinyun leaned closer to me with a look of panic. Chu Yi was more nervous than I. Quietly, he went over to Xinyun's side as if he's afraid that when Chu Kong get here, Chu Kong'll kill her. The expressions of the maids behind Chu Kong were resentful. Only Chu Kong seemed indifferent. With a raised chin, he stood proudly before me. His face was a bit pale. Presumably the pregnancy let his body become a little weak.

I touched my chin. Under such circumstances, how should the dialogue of the princess and the general be like? I agonized over it without result. I saw Chu Kong sitting beside me. He pointed at Xinyun's hand, which was holding me and said: "Let go."

Her voice wasn't loud, but her tone was arrogant and didn't let anyone disobey it.

Fire seemed to have caught Xinyun's hand. With a "putong" sound she kneeled down. Tears were in her eyes. She looked at me pitifully.

At this point, I still haven't figured out how general Chu will react, so I was pretending with an inscrutable look and continue to drink. I was waiting for Chu Kong to clean up this mess.

Chu Kong also picked up a cup and poured wine. The maid behind him immediately said: "Princess, you're pregnant. You shouldn't drink."

Chu Kong quietly played with the cup of wine for a while. Then he put the cup on the table and pushed it to Xinyun's side.

"I've forgotten that I was pregnant. That being the case, Xinyun lady can drink this cup of wine on *bengong*<sup>[1]</sup>'s behalf."

Xinyun shivered. Her eyes were frightened. I suddenly remembered

that this was no difference from *getting wine from the royal family*<sup>[2]</sup>. But I also know that although Chu Kong is arrogant, he won't murder someone casually. This wine must be because he wants to tease her.....

So I also opened my eyes and excitedly looked at Xinyun.

“General.....”

Chu Yi was more impatient than I. I waved to shut him up. Xinyun looked at me as in asking me to help her. I also stared at her. She seemed to know that I won't open my mouth to save her. She gritted her teeth, grabbed the cup of wine, raised it and drank all the wine. She closed her eyes and waited in fear for a long while. But nothing happened. She opened her eyes in more horror and glanced quickly at Chu Kong.

“Qingling princess, you.....”

“What about ben gong?”

Chu Kong smiled: “What about ben gong, you can only endure it.”

Xinyun hung her head. Her fists were clenched. The surrounding turned silent. Chu Kong's finger was tapping on the table. His head was looking down so I didn't know what he's thinking. I felt that staying silent like this is also not the answer, so I let Chu Yi sent Xinyun off. Chu Kong and I sat for a while, and then she let the maids wait outside.

After everyone left, I raised my thumbs: “You did the things very much like a princess. That arrogant look, cheche..... Forcing a woman like that, won't you feel guilty?”

I suddenly remembered the first time I went to the netherworld, the pink dressed lady who stood beside Chu Kong. I thought really hard and finally I remembered her name. I teasingly said to Chu Kong: “Did you ever treat that Yingshi immortal like that?”

Chu Kong's eyes lightly swept over me: “Yinshi, would not make that disgusting expression like her.”

Listening to him protecting a woman and remembering that after he wanted to make me a eunuch, he'll go back and watch stars with her, my heart suddenly felt unhappy.

I put the cup on the table and said: "I think that there's nothing wrong with Xinyun's expression. Being weak can reap many benefits."

Chu Kong looked sideways at me and raised a brow: "Do you really think of yourself as a man after receiving a shell?"

I didn't want to argue with him about this, turned and looked at the sky: "Well, today's autumn, the weather is nice."

Chu Kong laughed coldly: "I was busy inside and outside investigating; someone felt that he is the owner, was bored and sat here drinking. *Eating men and women alike*<sup>[3]</sup>, your life is really good."

I protested: "First, I didn't see myself as the owner and also didn't eat men and women alike. Second, I also earnestly went to find out our surroundings."

"Oh, then tell me what you've found out?"

I put a solemn expression and seriously said: "The cook of the general manor used too much time to cook."

I took a dessert on the table. While I took a bite and said with disgust: "I really don't know how the general and the princess can bear it till now. I'm trying to find a fault and dismiss him."

Chu Kong's lips trembled. Unrestrained, he flung the plate with the dessert and thrown it in the pond to feed fish.

"Good for nothing."

He evaluated me like that and then said solemnly: "Did you see that this Xinyun is not simple?"

I was surprised and busily let the desserts in my mouth slide down to my stomach.

"How complex can she be?"

“Think with the little brain that you have. If the arrogant princess really decided to perish together with the general, do you think that she’ll leave Xinyun alone? This woman is still alive, so I relentlessly researched her. Sure enough, someone is manipulating her from behind.”

“Who?”

Chu Kong shook his head: “What I can find now isn’t much. But you must be careful around this woman.”

Chu Kong touched his chin, narrowed his eyes and said: “With the power I have now I couldn’t find out much about Xinyun. The previous general climbed from the soldier’s position to the general’s position must be a smart man. He must’ve also detected something strange about Xinyun’s origin. Then why did he love her? Did she really befuddle his mind.....”

I touched the cup and said with speculation: “Can it be.....that the general didn’t like Xinyun that much as it seemed to outsiders?”

And also he didn’t hate the princess that much as it seemed to outsiders.....

Chu Kon frowned and thought for a while. Then he scolded: “These troublesome mortals, all day they only know how to create a mess!”

I scratched my head and said: “I really want to go to the netherworld and ask them what happened!”

Feeling sad for a while, I sat down and the pavilion quieted down. The autumn wind blew. I whispered: “Pregnancy.....how are you feeling?”

Chu Kong voice seemed to have disappeared. I continued to ask: “Did your belly grow bigger? Why do I feel that nothing is happening to you, ah.....”

I thought that after hearing those words, Chu Kong will get angry. I didn’t think glanced at me and said: “What should happen? Say it, let me listen to it.”

I raised my fingers one by one and counted: "The whole body feels tired, loss of appetite."

"A little."

"The breast hurts, nauseous and vomiting."

Chu Kong shook his head: "No."

I wondered: "Didn't your belly grow bigger?"

"How would I know if it got bigger," Chu Kong asked me. "Would xiaoye touch a woman's belly when he's bored?"

"But now this is your body!"

I pouted: "Do you think is cool to need to lift up the small jiji (you all understand what this is XD) when I go to the toilet? I, a virtuous lady need to do this every day. What's wrong with touching your belly every day to see if the child is well?"

Chu Kong narrowed his eyes: "Do you think it's easy to be a woman? The chest is painful like a heavy iron ball. Every day I still need to walk with a straight back. It's really tiring."

"Nonsense! Do you think I haven't been a woman before?! It wasn't so exaggerating."

Chu Kong raised an eyebrow and was quiet for a while. Suddenly he said smiling: "En, I think you'll never know my sorrow."

I clenched my fists. This bastard.....what does he mean....

Chu Kong suddenly stood up and picked the jug of wine on the table.

"This afternoon, I'll go and test that weak expression can reap benefit Xinyun lady. The wound on general is still not healed. Reward this wine to others."

He walked out of the garden.

I stared at the empty table. This pregnancy of Chu Kong is strange. I'll go and ask a doctor, let him gave her some medicine that's good for a pregnant woman.....

Princess is busy doing things outside, the general need to make him feel at peace on the inside. After all, we have a working relationship now.

After the meal, I went to the physician who lives inside the manor. Physician Zhang is a middle-aged man. He seems a little trifling and he seemed to be afraid of death. From the moment I entered his room, he has been shivering. I asked while frowning: "Did you recently go to check the princess's pulse?"

Physician Zhang shivered uncontrollably: "Answering the general, since the last time the princess.....was poisoned, she no longer lets me check her pulse and the medicine also has been returned."

"Nonsense, "I shouted angrily. "Forget about the princess being capricious. You helped her and did not report to me!"

If it delayed Chu Kong's labour, I fear that I no longer can see this kind of adventure!

Physician Zhan was scared and kowtowed: "General, forgive me! General, forgive me!"

I saw him shivering pitifully and let him stand up to answer. I told him the symptoms that Chu Kong has told me. I haven't even asked him when he knelt again with a "putong" sound. His body is now shivering more powerful. I wondered: "I didn't bully you. What are you afraid of? Stand up."

"I don't dare! I don't dare!"

Seeing him like that, I got angry and snapped: "Stand up! Say everything you know!"

Physician Zhang attached his head on the floor. With trembling voice he said: "I.....I think that this symptom of the princess, I fear.....I fear that in princess' belly is a stillbirth."

I blinked. I didn't get the meaning of those words.

"Say that again."

I squatted down and let my ear be beside his mouth.



“Louder.”

“Princess.....princess is pregnant with.....with a stillbirth.”

I listened to it carefully. I stood up and felt a little dizzy. Physician Zhang said while trembling gain: “General, general, if we don’t let the fetus come out quickly, it’ll cause great harm to the mother! If it isn’t done properly, the princess will also.....”

My heart felt cold. I grabbed physician Zhang’s hand and went to the residence of Chu Kong.

Let stillbirth be stillbirth. Can’t see Chu Kong go into labor is alright, but if he dies.....

My heart felt some inexplicable panic. If he’s dead, with what will I play with?

I hurriedly rushed to Chu Kong’s chamber. His maid was evasive and refused to tell me where Chu Kong is. I was so angry that fire was nearly forming. Suddenly, I remembered that he told me that in the afternoon he was going to test Xinyun lady. At this time he must be at Xinyun’s. I grabbed the physician again, let Chu Yi prepare a carriage and hurriedly rushed to Xinyun.

Xinyun lives in a small house on the west of the city. This was especially arranged by the general. The carriage stopped in front of the door. I jumped out. Suddenly, in the yard I can hear Chu Kong’s gasp: “Damn.....”

His voice was tight. He seemed in unbearable pain.

Chu Yi frowned. He must be surprised that the haughty and proud Qingling princess will also curse.

And now I’m too busy to care that our identity will be discovered. I thought that something must’ve happened inside. I took two steps, kicked the door open and went straight inside.

I was shocked to see the scene inside. Three men in black were standing inside. One of them was grabbing Xinyun’s armpit. She seemed to have suffered light injuries.

Chu Kong was squatting on the ground. His whole forehead was full of cold sweat. He was really pale. A large gorgeous skirt was spread over the ground. Two maids were lying beside Chu Kong. I don't know if they have fainted or if they are on the road to the netherworld.

With my sudden appearance the men were scared. The three men glanced at each other.

The word "run" fell out, something exploded. Everywhere was dust. The Chu Yi beside me didn't wait for the dust to settle and went to catch up with them. In a blink of eye, I didn't know where he went to. I didn't have the desire to care about who these people are. I ran towards Chu Kong. I patted his face, letting him be conscious.

"Hey, how are you? Injured? Where are you injured?"

Chu Kong grabbed my hand tightly. He couldn't spit one complete word out. I listened to each carefully for half a day and still didn't understand. He began to roll his eyes uncontrolled. The broken pieces that came out of his mouth finally gave two relatively clear words: "Given.....birth...."

My head was blank for a moment. I didn't care about anything else and hugged him. The wide skirt below him was in blood and blood was still flowing out in an unimaginable speed. It's my first time experiencing such a scene; I was scared that I began to tremble. I said in panic: "Chu Kong this isn't right! How come you giving birth is like menstruating.....this isn't right!"

Physician Zhang, who was hiding outside seemed like he couldn't stand it anymore. He ran to me and looked at Chu Kong and said in panic: "General, it's a dead fetus. The fetus has flown out! Cannot let the princess continue to bleed. Must stop the bleeding!"

Among the panic, I asked: "How how how to stop the bleeding? Blocking it? With what does it need to be blocked? Rolling pin?"

The physician hasn't given me an answer yet, when Chu Kong who I thought has fainted suddenly grabbed my hand. He stared at me fiercely: "You dare to be reckless.....try!"

I was so anxious that I'm about to cry. My eyes were red and my nose is sore and sour.

"Then what do you do. Does it hurt? What do I need to do? What do you want me to do?!"

Chu Kong seeing me like that was a bit surprised: "It's just.....one reincarnation....."

How can I not understand what he said? The purpose of our lives in this world is just a reincarnation, but every reincarnation is unique. If we missed it, it'll not exist again.

Humans are fragile. That's why they cherish it more. Perhaps I and Chu Kong will never understand the fear of death, but at this moment I knew that he miscarried a life. Helplessly watching a life slowly went through the passage of human life.....

I cannot be unafraid. I cannot stop trembling. Gods have little feelings; maybe it's because there are only a few matters that concerns them.

---

### Notes

1. 本宫 (Běn gōng): means I. When someone from the court excluding the emperor refer to him/herself they'll use ben before their title like ben wang, ben fei, ben jiangjun and ben gong.
2. When an emperor or someone from the royal family wants to give you a cup of wine, mostly it's poison.
3. Chu Kong meant that she likes man and woman.

# Chapter 27

---

## Part 1

---

I stayed by Chu Kong's bed for three days and three nights. This is the first time I saw arrogant Chu Kong being so weak and pale. I'm still really not used to it, even though he's a woman right now. So well behaved laying in bed, letting people look at him, made me think about the time he was Lu Hai Kong.

Very strong and yet very fragile; only letting his guard down when he's with me.....even though he's a woman now. Even I myself didn't know that I'll panic like that when I saw him bleed. It felt like the sky was falling down. It's my first time feeling such a strange feeling.....even though the other party is a woman.

I covered my face and sighed. I didn't know that after that sigh, the person lying in bed for three days without moving suddenly groaned. I was startled, immediately moved closer to his head and said softly: "Chu Kong, princess Kong? Are you awake?"

His eyelids moved and with extreme difficulty he opened his eyes. I stared at him and was afraid that he'll lose consciousness again.

Chu Kong narrowed his eyes and stared at me for a while. Suddenly his eyes closed again. My heart panicked. It couldn't be that just now he used his last power? This can't happen! I used my fingers to open his already closed eyelids. Against the whites of his eyes, I called out: "No! Don't ! Don't die!"

"Die.....don't die, will it go according to what I say....."

Chu Kong voice was hoarse and weak. He rolled his eyes. I finally can see his pupils. My mind is at peace now. I let go of his hand, took a deep breath and said: "When you kept rolling your eyes, I was afraid that you were dying."

Chu Kong glanced at me and immediately turned away. His voice

sounded quite disgusted when he said: "The moment I woke up and saw a dirty rough man crouched by my bed really sucks."

I knew that he wouldn't die when he spoke with such a tone. The big rock that has been pressing my heart finally fell down. I didn't care about his attitude, sat on the bed and laughed: "It's good that you're alive."

Chu Kong's eyebrows moved. He looked at me sideways.

"Were.....were you really worried about me?"

"Really worried."

It seemed like he didn't expect that I would answer so straightforwardly, Chu Kong didn't say anything. He buried his head in the quilt. Then I saw that his ears turned red again.

I wiped my sad tears.

"If you're gone, who'll run to the front to protect me against knives? By then I'll be dead and need to kiss Yanwang's cheeks in the netherworld. Beside you already kissed him. It's terrorizing thinking about it, right?"

The room was quiet for a while. Chu Kong pulled his head out of the quilt. He glared at me and ruthlessly said: "Get out."

"Out to where?"

I suddenly realized.

"Look at me being confused. I should've let the physician check your pulse first!"

I hold Chu Kong's hand tightly: "I know that you're sad about losing the child, but in life, there's nothing that won't pass. Every time when there's something difficult, just think about it as enriching our wealth."

I looked at Chu Kong's pale face that is a little dark now.

"You must be strong!"

Chu Kong used all his strength and pulled his hand away. Trembling

and pointing at the door while gritting his teeth, he said: "Out!"

I did as he wished and left the room. I called physician Zhang and several maids into the room. I earnestly said: "The princess just lost the child. Inevitably, she'll be depressed. You serve her well."

Even if the general's body was made from iron, keeping watch over Chu Kong for three days without rest, I couldn't help but be tired. I went back to my room and went straight to my bed. I closed my eyes and was about to sleep. In this peaceful darkness, I can hear the beating of my heart more clearly. I touched my somewhat hot cheek. I looked up at the sky and sighed. The situation is a bit bad, ah.....

"You.....worry about me?"

"Really worried."

Thinking about this conversation, I couldn't help but cover my mouth. It simply felt like I blurted it out. Not even covering will help.

What's wrong with me? What went wrong?

## **Part 2**

---

I woke up at the first daylight. I rolled out of the bed, pushed the door open and was startled at the sight in front of me.

"Why are you kneeling again?"

Chu Yi was kneeling in front of the door. After hearing me, he knocked his head on the floor and said: "General, please punish me. Those people escaped."

I touched my nose. I was wondering what for temper did the former general has. Why do the people at his home like to kneel so much? I waved my hand and said: "Forget it. Let them escape."

In a blink of eye, I was already walking in the direction of Chu Kong's room. Chu Yi didn't stand up yet and knocked his head again on the floor.

“General, Xinyun lady.....you set this trap for so long and now you’re letting her get away.”

I stopped in my tracks. My eyes fell on Chu Yi. The former general really became suspicious of Xinyun lady! It appears that Chu Yi knows really well what kind of trap the general has set. I narrowed my eyes and said: “Things has already gone this way. Now we can only take a step and calculate the next.”

Chu Yi’s head is still glued on the ground. He said with a voice full of remorse: “Blame this servant’s incompetence for letting Xinyun and those spies of Wei country escape together!”

I nodded. It turned out that Xinyun lady is a spy from Wei country. The former general must’ve seen through Xinyun’s identity. So he went along with their plan and kept her by his side. Then he can get information about Wei country. He really is a clever general. I said: “No harm. Even with a soldier’s blocking, water can still pass. You get up first.”

Chu Yi finally stood up. He glanced once at me and said with a worried voice: “General, each day that passed the situation at the border gets worse. I’m afraid that there’ll be war again. And since the last injury, your body.....”

His worried words went into my ears. The four words that stayed in my heart were “there’ll be war again”. I suddenly felt that what Chu Kong and I said about the temple and the jianghu are not that dangerous. The place where most people die is at the battlefield ah! Among the powerful army, even your dead body won’t be found.

I rubbed my forehead and pretended to be calm.

“En, I have my own plan.”

After saying that, I didn’t look at him and went straight to Chu Kong. This is something we need to talk about.

The moment I walked into Chu Kong’s room, he was drinking medicine. The maid is feeding him with a beautiful little spoon. I saw him frown while drinking the medicine. It must be painful for him to drink medicine that way.

I walked towards the maid and took away the bowl of medicine.

"I'll do it. You can retreat."

The maids looked at each other and didn't go away, until Chu Kong opened his mouth to let them retreat. They walked out and shut the door.

I unceremoniously sat down on his bed and handed the bowl to Chu Kong to let him drink it himself. Chu Kong looked at me dissatisfied.

"You said you'll feed me, ah."

My heart was anxious. After hearing those words I didn't bother to fight with him. I rose, lifted his chin and pinched his mouth. The bowl of medicine went in with "gudong gudong" sounds.

It felt like that day when he forced me to drink the soup of oblivion.

I put the bowl aside and said with a serious tone: "Big bad news."

A fist landed on my face.

"You go die!"

This fist of him felt like tickling but it let him cough half to death. I grabbed his hand, patted his back and continued to say with a serious tone: "Chu Kong, I felt that now is the time that we should elope."

Chu Kong stopped coughing. He looked at me with narrowed eyes and said with contempt: "What did you do again?"

"Do you know that Xinyun is a spy from Wei country?"

"En, I know."

"Qi country and Wei country may start war again. I might be the one who'll be going to the battlefield!"

"I already guessed that."

I gritted my teeth angrily: "How come you know everything, but don't say anything to me?! You, sinister man, you must want to see me



die on the battlefield and then remarry!”

“All of this, I got to know when I was at Xinyun’s house. Xiaoye just didn’t find the opportunity to tell you,” Chu Kong said. “If my stomach didn’t suddenly hurt, those four guys would have been caught.”

I wondered: “Didn’t you lose all your powers?”

Chu Kong laughed: “Some things are deep in the soul. Forget it, even if I tell you, you won’t understand. Now only this body is in xiaoye’s way a bit. If we two change, see how I’ll play with those few mortals.”

I sighed: “The fact is that we don’t have a way to change, ah. So let’s just run away. If you still want to stay and play, then I’ll run away first.”

My words just left my mouth when someone suddenly knocked on the door. A maid voice can be heard: “General, the emperor has sent a decree. The general must go to the palace immediately.”

Chu Kong looked at me and said: “Well, it seems that now you can’t run away anymore.”

I covered my chest and silently let my sad tears drip on my face.

# Chapter 28

---

## Part 1

---

Go...into the palace?

Recently, this general and that princess didn't live in peace with each other. Two months ago they tried to kill each other. And yesterday the princess had a miscarriage. The emperor being "my" brother in law, surely won't let me *eat good fruit*<sup>[1]</sup>.....

My heart was disturbed. On the way to the palace I thought of numerous ways to escape. But when I looked at Chu Yi, who was riding on a horse beside me; I think he'll not run away with me. With no servant to serve me, my life as a commoner won't be easy.

I gritted my teeth, calmed my heart and consoled myself. The emperor also won't matter. No matter how powerful he is, it's impossible for him to see that inside this rough man's skin is a fragile woman.

In the first lifetime, I went to the palace a few times with father Song. I still remember the palace etiquettes. After passing the Shen wing, the eunuch took me to the royal study.

Sitting behind a large desk is a man wearing dark red clothes. He was writing. His expression was serious. I thought to myself. The two are emperor, but the emperor of the human realm looks more like an emperor than Yanwang.

I don't know how the emperor usually gets along with the general and I also don't know if they have a good relationship. So I simply bowed and silently kneeled down. When facing someone strong being obedient is always good.

The eunuch was standing beside the emperor. To reduce their presence, even their breathing couldn't be heard.

I heard the emperor put aside his brush.

“Qinghui.”

His voice was deep.

“Is Fuying’s body alright?”

I thought for half a day before I realized that Qinghui and Fuying are I and Chu Kong. My heart was lamenting. It really is because of that, that I was summoned. I kept my head down and said: “Your vassal is guilty.”

The side of the emperor was silent. Then I heard a chuckle. The emperor said: “You can stand up. Besides, now the empress dowager isn’t here, you don’t have to pretend anymore.”

Hey, what is this situation? My heart was beating really hard. I pretended to be calm and stood up.

There still a trace of smile on the lips of the emperor behind the desk, but his eyes look like they’re biting into ice. He peered at me and said: “Qinghui, you say, now that Fuying lost the child, will it cause us more harm or will it get us more benefit?”

This emperor and the general are really impure ah.....

I narrowed my eyes and *hold the emperor’s smelly feet*<sup>[2]</sup>: “This vassal is dull.”

The emperor chuckled for a few times: “Not having seen you for a few days, Qinghui has learned to be humble.”

The emperor’s finger’s tapped on the desk.

“After receiving the news yesterday, *zhen*<sup>[3]</sup> was happy that the throne could be saved, but I was also worried.....after some days Da Qi country won’t be safe. This move of Wei country was terrific.”

I totally didn’t understand what he was saying. I only gazed at the ground in front of me.

The royal study was silent for a moment, then the emperor suddenly stood up. He stood in front of me and said: “Speaking of, Qinghui recently it seems that you are neglecting the affairs of the court a

little.”

My heart tightened and I wanted to kneel again, but the emperor seemed to have expected it. He grabbed my hand and pulled me up.

“Qinhui, you don’t need to be cautious. It’s not that I blame you. You and I are brothers for many years; of course I know that you’re loyal and doesn’t have a second thought. It’s just.....aren’t you a little too soft-hearted on Fuying on many occasions?”

My body turned stiff. In my heart I was saying bitterly: “I cannot not be soft-hearted on “Fuying” ah.....”

“I know that Fuying is infatuated with you. Two people living together for a long time, it’s inevitable that some feelings you shouldn’t have will be formed.”

I wondered since the general and the princess are already married what more feelings shouldn’t they have.

“I heard that after seeing Fuying miscarriage you were really hurt and was by her bed for three days and three nights without rest. You even let Chuyi go catch those spies alone. Now they even escaped. Qinhui, say, this matter don’t you also has some responsibility?”

## **Part 2**

---

Seeing that I wasn’t speaking, the emperor chuckled again.

“Qinghui don’t be nervous. I love you as a brother, how can I bear to punish you?”

He slowly walked back to the desk, tilted his robes and sat down.

“Today I let Qinghui enter the palace just to tell you one thing.”

The emperor picked up the brush and took a new piece of paper. While writing, he said: “I don’t know if Wei country will send a decree declaring war. If that it’s so I’m afraid that Qinghui will need to go and battle against them. This war can only be won, it can’t be lost. Otherwise, you and I will only have one ending.”

He handed me the written paper. On top of it was just the word “death” written in red ink. My mouth twitched. This emperor, when he needs to be straightforward, he really is too straightforward. Before leaving the royal study, the emperor said faintly to me: “Qinghui, the war is just around the corner. Protect the military seal well.”

My heart tightened. I felt cold sweat sliding down. Military seal..... where would I go find the military seal for you? Do you want me, this general, to go ask Chu Yi? Where did I put the military seal before? This is really not reliable!

Back at the general’s mansion, I didn’t bother with other things and went straight to Chu Kong’s room. This time he was eating porridge with a look of enjoyment.

The cold sweats sticking on my back made me feel cold. I grabbed the bowl from the maid and said: “I’ll do it.”

The maid looked at Chu Kong. Chu Kong said: “You can retreat.”

The moment the door shut, I sat on Chu Kong’s bed with a heavy look.

“Big bad news.”

This time Chu Kong learned to behave. He took the bowl from me. While sipping, he said: “You already said that before you entered the palace.”

I am anxious and shouted: “This time it’s really bad!”

I told Chu Kong everything that happened in the palace and then asked him: “You say, what does the emperor mean? And then there’s the military seal. I don’t know the former general, how will I know where he’ll put the military seal? By the time I need to go to battle; a general who can’t take out the military seal; I’m afraid that I haven’t even set foot on the battlefield, I’ll be beheaded by the emperor.”

Chu Kong continued to calmly drink porridge. He set the bowl aside, rubbed his mouth and said very calmly: “Well, you say, is the military seal this toy?”

He took a tiger shaped white jade out of his sleeves. There is a fine tiger inscription on it. I was shocked: "From where did you steal it?"

"From the moment we two begin this lifetime, it was always with me. I didn't know what this thing was before, but from its appearance I tell that I can sell it for a high price. So I took it everywhere with me. I was thinking that after we went into seclusion in the mountain, I'll pawn it. Well, I didn't expect that this is indeed a treasure."

I was completely confused.

"Wait, how come the general's military seal is with you? What the emperor told me today, I can tell that the emperor and the princess obviously stood on the opposite side of each other. They're enemies, ah."

Chu Kong laughed: "I already know all the causes and consequences. Do you want to know? If you want to know then call me *daye*<sup>[4]</sup> and let me hear you admit your mistake."

"Daye, I was wrong," I said. "Quick, tell me what happened."

I excitedly stared at Chu Kong. Chu Kong gritted his teeth and for a long time, he couldn't utter a word. The more I think about it, the more I felt that this arrogant boy is stranger as the days pass by.

Meeting his demand is not right.

Not meeting his demand is also not right.

Really making it difficult for people, ah.

Chu Kong was silent for a very long time before he slowly said: "Do you know that the throne of the current emperor is not safe?"

"How would I know?"

"I didn't say you should answer!"

The veins on Chu Kong's forehead are visible. He sighed heavily before he said: "The current empress dowager isn't the biological mother of the emperor. She only took care of him and watched him grow. The former emperor died early. The empress dowager took

care of the affairs of the court behind a curtain and controlled the state. The emperor grew by day and became more difficult to control. The empress dowager wants to get rid of the emperor and put a new emperor on the throne. The emperor is childless, so there's no candidate. At this time the biological daughter of the empress dowager, princess Qingling got pregnant. The empress dowager wanted to make the princess' child the new emperor."

"But how does the empress dowager know that the child in the princess' belly will be a male?"

"Is or isn't, is not important. Even if the princess gives birth to a monster as long as the empress dowager wants, eventually it'll become a boy."

I understood: "They want to switch the child!"

Chu Kong nodded: "This way the emperor will be ridden off; the empress dowager will choose a new emperor; she'll have more control of the state. I'm afraid that this time the princess didn't take the poison herself, but has been murdered by the spies of Wei country. You see, getting rid of the princess and the child; the emperor and the empress dowager will continue their battle. The internal affairs are unstable; the one that'll benefit the most is Wei country. They'll take advantage of the situation and declare war. That's why when you went into the palace today, the emperor told you that he was both pleased and worried. So he gives you a bright red "death" word to tell you to go to war with Wei country. You can only win, you can't lose. If you lose, even without the empress dowager's conspiracy, he'll need to end his days as emperor."

"In order to protect the emperor do I need to go to war?"

I didn't understand: "But the army has never declared war to protect someone."

Chu Kong's eyebrow raised a little: "You're right, but if you don't protect him now, the emperor will kill you."

I sighed: "The mortals have complicated minds."

I turned, thought for a while and then asked Chu Kong: "How come

you suddenly understand this situation so clearly?”

Chu Kong smiled: “After you entered the palace, the empress dowager also sent someone to me. From that man’s mouth, I got all the information I want. I’m not like someone, only letting other reprimand her.”

Although his words are really provoking, but now I cannot not think seriously about this matter.....There’s really a gap between my and Chu Kong’s intelligence.

Chu Kong lay in bed and said happily: “Now we’ve figured out everything. We can also not escape the capital. We can only wait for Wei country and Qi country to start war. In the midst of tumult losing one or two people is really common.”

This guy.....Even our escape during the war can he say in such a righteous way.

I expressed my contempt by pouting. Suddenly a question flashed in my mind: “Chu Kong, how did the general die?”

Who stabbed him with a dagger? This general looks like he really can fight. But why does it look like that they he didn’t seem to have struggled?

Chu Kong closed his eyes and said lazily: “Is this still important? In front of the big situation, who will still bother about their trivial love?”

---

## Notes

1. *It’s a Chinese saying. XXZ is thinking that the emperor will let her suffer.*
2. *Another Chinese saying. It means flatter. XXZ is flattering the emperor.*
3. *Zhen is what the emperor use to call them self.*
4. 大爷 (dàyé): it means uncle. When you call someone that, it means that you’re below that person and are willing to follow him. But this word also can be used to curse someone.





# Chapter 29

---

## Part 1

---

Three months later; it's now midwinter. Wei country has sent a decree declaring war to Qi country. At this time, the emperor and the empress dowager were fighting very intense with each other.

Before going sending the troops, the emperor summoned me to the palace again to appease and intimidate me. I thought that since he said so, I will not be able to slip from the battlefield.

Back to the general's mansion, Chu Kong was gnawing on a roasted chicken while he said bitterly: "Damn Wei country, why start war in midwinter, causing xiaoye to run here and there in this weather. Xiao Xiang Zi, go, go fight a battle or two with them. Abuse them a little before running away."

While I was wondering what things I need to bring with me, I was dissatisfied with him.

"You're not the one who needs to go on the battlefield. You only know lip service. If you want to abuse them, go abuse them yourself."

Chu Kong bit in a large piece of meat and mumbled vaguely: "Who says xiaoye isn't going?"

My eyes lit up and I stared at him.

"Do you want to impersonate me and go on the battlefield in my place? Princess Kong, after becoming a woman you've become more human."

Chu Kong faintly glanced at me once. Suddenly he sneered obscurely. Then he continued to bite into his chicken. Surprisingly, he didn't refute me, but it disturbed my mind.

A few days after that, I didn't even get to see the shadow of Chu

Kong. I still didn't see him on the day of departing. I began to worry. I wasn't worried about him. I was worried about myself. Only the Gods will know what game he's playing again.....

On the day of departing, I drank blood wine with the emperor on a very long table.

I was wearing a heavy armor and riding a warhorse. The warhorse staggered a little and shook its head. I think that I wore too much armor.....

In front of the citizen of the capital who came to see me off, I led the horse and left the capital.

I heard that this general Chu was very brave before he died. He also has good war tactics. Every war he battled in, even if he was at disadvantage, he still can win.

Wei country feared this general Chu considerably. Of course, on the way to the frontline, I have suffered many assassination attempts.

It's just in this hard life of this lifetime, when being poisoned Chu Yi will block it for me. When being assassinated Chu Yi will block it for me. He really is a human shield. My 'gold' armor will also block it for me. Every time a killer is near me, I didn't move or run. I sat there firmly. When the killer is about to give me a deathly blow, no matter if it's his head, shoulder or abdomen, the first thing that'll fall is his big sword. Over time there were rumors about the general being unbeatable. The rumors in the army were saying that the general is really powerful and that he cultivated a golden hard body that won't go bad.

The mortals don't know.....I, this general's golden hard body is not unbeatable, but it's really hard to run away with this body.

The biggest problem which I received from the assassination attempts was Chu Yi watched more carefully over me. All day long, he was beside me with that wooden face. It became really difficult to escape.

Day after day the frontline gets nearer. Every day I was so anxious that I was sleepless at night.

This night, the army camped on the outskirts. I was sitting in a tent with a headache. Suddenly I can hear Chu Yi's voice yelling: "Presumptuous! Who's underling are you? How do you dare to sneak into the general's tent."

An assassination attempt again? I waited for half a day and still didn't hear a sound. My heart was anxious. I walked out of the tent. I saw Chu Yi holding a skinny soldier. His eyes looked coldly at Chu Yi. Seeing that I came out, his eyes fell on me. His brows raised slightly and his lips moved: "Xiao Xiang Zi."

I also raised an eyebrow. I didn't expect Chu Kong to dress like a soldier and mix into the army. But why didn't he come to look for me after so many days? Why did he come today? I coughed and said: "Soldier, what do you have to report?"

In the sunlight, Chu Kong's face was a little pale. He deliberately lowered his voice and said hoarsely: "General, it's a life threatening information."

I nodded: "Come in and talk."

Chu Yi refused to release him.

"General, this is probably wrong....."

"No harm."

I waved my hands and took Chu Kong with me into the tent. It's just that this isn't like the general's mansion. When talking, it can be heard on the outside. I let Chu Kong come to the desk. I handed him a brush and asked: "What do you have to report?"

While Chu Kong spoke "a matter of life and death", he wrote on the paper "there's another child in my belly."

## **Part 2**

---

I was shocked and looked dumbfounded at Chu Kong. I forgot to answer him.

Heavens, after he lost the child, I really didn't touch her! Can it be that in this short three months he.....he has found a man outside? I instantly feel my face become green with anger. But when I think carefully gain this is really bizarre. This celestial star Chu Kong is.....is really one of a kind? So when he finally has a woman's body, he couldn't wait.....this really is something unexpected.

Seeing that my expression is weirder by the minute, he wrote: "Cut all those messy imaginations of yours."

Chu Kong wrote seriously again: "Only half of the fetus came out that time."

I was surprised again. Does this princess get miscarriage only by half?

Chu Kong glared at me and wrote: "This body is weak."

After receiving one big news after another, Chu Kong made me completely speechless. I was frozen for a moment. Then I stooped down and opened his hem without a word. I saw a red mark which is slowly expanding on his blue undergarments.

I froze for a moment and then a thought flashed through my mind. I asked: "Does it hurt?"

He answered immediately: "Hurt."

I nodded and stood up. I whispered in his ear: "I think your period has come."

"Pu," Chu Kong shivered and turned his head. His expression was like he is lost. I patted his shoulder.

"This is really normal. You should get accustomed to it."

Chu Kong squatted while clutching his stomach. I saw that he was in shock. I was soft-hearted for a moment and dragged him to my bed. I went out of the tent and said to Chu yi, who was guarding outside my tent: "Bring me some clean clothes and bring me some cotton and thread."

After hearing what I said, Chu Yi looked at me strangely. It took a

while before he nodded and hesitantly did he leave.

I didn't know why he was like that and swept my gaze across the soldiers. They also gave me an awkward look. I turned, looked at the tent and saw that the fire inside the tent made Chu Kong's figure appear on the tent. I clearly saw him rolling on my bed. Instantly, I understood what the expression of these people meant.

This, how can I explain this.....

I touched my nose and waited for Chu Yi to bring the things that I needed. Then I went inside the tent and put the fire out to put an end to their imaginations.

I let Chu Kong change into the clean clothes. In the dark I sew a piece of cloth with cotton inside for him. Chu Kong lay on the bed with a pale face and said softly: "You women really don't have an easy life."

I always have a healthy body, so I never knew the pain of periods. But this time Chu Kong actually said such a sentence, I felt that this pain must be more painful than death.

I probed with my hand in the quilt. I rubbed his belly and said softly: "It's good that you know. See how you can bully me in the future without a guilty conscience."

"Why can't I?"

Chu Kong said with a righteous voice: "Now I'm the woman."

I pressed his belly: "You're really thick-skinned."

I rubbed his belly for a while. I also began to feel sleepy. I stepped into the bed and lay next to him. I said vaguely: "When will we run away? After a few more days, we'll be at the frontline."

"I said I want to abuse Wei country a little for letting xiaoye suffer. Not letting them pay me back, I'll be sorry for all this body's pain."

I sighed: "It's not Wei country that has let you to have your period. Why do you bother with these mortals? Quickly run away is the important issue now."

“I don’t want to.”

My mouth twitched. In my heart, I felt that Chu Kong is really obsessed.

Sure enough.....tomorrow I’ll abandon Chu Kong and run away alone. His period came, so I think he can’t play any sort of games.

But a plan will always not keep up with the changes. The next day, I suffered another assassination attempt. But this time.....the one that Wei country sent to assassinate me was a troop of two thousand men.

We are now located in the middle of a forest. At one side is a mountain; at another side is a cliff. Beneath is a river.

Wei country wants to ambush us here; we’ll be jumping of the mountain or jumping of the cliff.

I rode on a horse. Chu Kong rode beside me. He dodged here and there on the horse. Not a stone hit him. My horse is a good horse, but due to its weight, his reaction is always a half beat slower. I rode on it and also dodged. I dodged the big stone, but there’ll always be small stones that hit my head. Not long after I was dizzy; my reactions also turned slower.

Suddenly I feel a shadow over me. I looked up and saw a gigantic stone coming straight towards me. My mind was blank. I think that this time, I’ll really turn into a minced meat and go to the netherworld to kiss Yanwang.

In a split of moment, a horse hit my horse. I felt that someone crashing on my body and I fell of the horseback onto the ground. The giant stone flew across of me, but it almost touched my leg.

I stared blankly at the person lying above of me. A little dumbfounded I said: “Chu Kong, you in a woman’s body, how did you throw me off the horseback.....”

Running away alone is now really hard ah.....

Chu Kong grabbed my collar and cursed: “You’d become more

stupid, ah! Do you really want to go kiss Yanwang's cheek?!"

I was about to explain that I really couldn't move, but I haven't even opened my mouth when the ground suddenly shook. I was surprised. The color of Chu Kong's face also changed.

"Not good, the giant stone put pressure here."

He stood up and hasn't stabilized his body yet, I felt the ground shake again. My whole body rolled down. I looked down and that down; there is the river.

This..... I might as well just get crushed by the stone; it'll be a quicker death.....

My hand felt tight. I turned and saw Chu Kong lying on the ground and grabbing my hand. His face was pale. All the pain showed on his face.

"You.....fucking you.....so.....so heavy!"

Sorry, the heavy thing is the golden armor.....

"Let go," I said. "You don't need to die with me."

I am always a person with a good heart. In front of death, I don't want to drag a scapegoat with me. After all, in this lifetime Chu Kong treated me pretty well. Both of us got along harmoniously. There's no need to die together here.

Chu Kong gritted his teeth, but still grabbed me tightly. My heart fluttered. Seeing this man with the delicate face, my heart somehow began to beat chaotically.

Suddenly a sentiment crossed my mind. So this lifetime's play of the little wife chasing the husband is like this, ah. So the feeling of the little wife chasing the husband felt like this, ah. So, even knowing that he's Chu Kong, I'll still have moments where I can't control my heartbeat, ah.....

The golden armor is really heavy. Chu Kong's body has been dragged down the cliff with me.



With a “putong “sound we fell into the river. I felt the cold water against my body. I was dragged by this heavy armor directly into the river. Suddenly, I thought that Chu Kong is still on his period. He..... must be really in pain now.

My neck felt tight. A slender arm grabbed my head. I felt someone pulling me to the surface. But this armor is really heavy and dragged both of us to the bottom of the river. Chu Kong who came to save me fiercely slapped my face. He seemed to be very angry.

All the way down, I firmly stood on the river ground. I dimly felt Chu Kong anxiously getting rid of my armor. When I was about to lose consciousness, I subconsciously opened my mouth to breath, but I gulped some river water. I subconsciously wanted to struggle. Bubbles formed into my mouth and I gulped more water.

In this confused moment, I felt warm lips on my lips. Warm breath went into my mouth. My mind cleared a lot. At the same time I felt my body turned lighter. The heavy armor fell on the ground, making the sand go flying.

Chu Kong grabbed my collar and swim to the surface. His moves were a little slow. He must..... also be almost out of breath.

My gaze is fixed on the moon on the surface of the river. I suddenly felt something grabbing my feet. I don't know from where an aquatic plant grabbed my leg. I was shocked and began to struggle. Chu Kong hasn't reached the surface yet. He turned and looked. His face turned pale.

Suddenly the aquatic plant which was grabbing my leg began to pull me down. I wondered, this isn't right.....this feeling is obviously a living thing pulling me down.....

I looked back and saw the plant which was grabbing me turned into a chain. It wrapped around my whole leg. It pulled me again. I was totally unable to resist it and it pulled me down. My eyes widened in horror and I looked at Chu Kong. At that moment it pulled me with more strength. I was severely pulled down. My head slammed on the ground of the river. In this darkness, I felt someone grabbing my hand tightly. Regardless of the turbulent flow, he didn't let me go.



# Chapter 30

---

## Part 1

---

Ding dong, ding dong.

The sound of the blue stones on the river ground kept ringing in my ears.

I opened my eyes and saw a sharp knife like stone pointing at me. It seemed like it wanted to fall down and crush me into powder. I was scared by this scene that my heart immediately turned cold. I immediately sobered up. I sat down on the ground. The memories from before I lost consciousness slowly came back; falling into the river, getting rid of the armor, sharing breath. I didn't have time to feel shy about Chu Kong sharing breath with me. When I thought about him getting rid of my golden armor, my heart is filled with hate. If I can survive this time, how will I continue to live without money?! Chu Kong isn't aware of the distress of being poor. Before returning to heaven, I really don't want to taste the pain anymore of wanting to eat meat but couldn't eat it.

Even if it's hateful, it can't be helped. The fact is it's been done and I can only accept it. I rubbed my head and looked at the environment around me. This seemed like a deep secluded cave. Everywhere are stalactites. I felt it was really strange. I remembered clearly, I was dragged down by a strange chain into the river. Why am I now in a place like this? And.....where is Chu Kong?

I held onto one of the stalactites and wanted to stand up. Suddenly, I felt a sharp pain in my lower abdomen, like a needle piercing through there. I strongly endured it for a while, but the pain intensified. There seemed to be a razor in my womb. I curled from pain. I clenched my teeth, but I couldn't close my mouth.

This time.....did someone tried to poison me again.....

“Xiao Xiang Zi.”

Someone tapped me on my face.

“Hey, hold it for moment.”

Someone grabbed my shoulder and shook it.

While I was in pain, I opened my eyes and looked at him. In the dim light of the cave, I can barely see his face. I kept staring. I haven't had the time to be surprised, when I felt another cramp, making me arch my body. I tried to break away from that person, but my arms didn't have any strength. I gasped: “Ghost.....ghost.....”

I saw that the person actually has “Chu Qinghui's” face.

“Chu Qinghui” frowned and said very unhappily: “Your uncle is a ghost. Xiaoye is Chu Kong.”

I gasped: “How come.....how come you look.....look the same as me now?”

After those words, I was shocked. How come that out of my mouth will come such a delicate voice? Recently, I've been getting used to a man's voice. Suddenly, a woman's voice came out; I'm really not used to it.

Chu Kong was very dissatisfied and said: “Who looks like you? You go look at yourself.”

In a blink of eye, he grabbed my hand and set it in front of my eyes. I took a closer look. It's a delicate hand, soft like without bones. This.....this is obviously a woman's hand. I slowly moved the fingers and found out that it's really my hand. I was shocked. I felt the pain again and suddenly realized: “We.....we changed bodies?”

Chu Kong nodded: “Although I don't know what happened, but it seems that we really changed our bodies.”

I flew into a rage: “Child's play! Nonsense! Absurd!”

After saying that, I clutched my stomach for a while, before I have enough strength again to continue: “Placing a soul into a body is a rule of reincarnation. It is prescribed by the heavens and the netherworld. Only in the well of reincarnation can a soul enter a

body. Even if it's a god, he can't exchange a soul. Who dared to exchange us?! Who dared to break the rule?! He needs to be executed!"

Chu Kong narrowed his eyes and said: "You're just not satisfied to be in this princess' body."

I hold my belly and said full of hate: "Who will want to suffer this pain?"

My belly is filled with pain. It really made me worry that this princess' body won't survive for twenty years, even if no one harms her! Previously, the pain was on Chu Kong's body. Although I sympathized with him, but I haven't experienced it personally.

So.....the pain of periods is more painful than breaking the egg.....

My belly suddenly felt warm. Chu Kong is rubbing my belly. My body stiffened a little. I heard Chu Kong say: "I know you're angry now because of the pain, but this wasn't xiaoye's intension. Why did we change? How did we come here? I'm also confused now. But it is strange that we can change our souls. If I find the reason....."

Chu Kong lowered his voice: "If you find it painful, we can then change back."

I didn't know what sort of feelings passed through my heart. I tilted my head and looked quietly at Chu Kong's face in the dim light of the cave.

He twisted his head and didn't know where to look at. My eyes were too hot for him. It burned his face. His eyes rolled, glanced at me once, looked away again and said: "Heng.....Heng! Don't be mistaken! Xiaoye just felt that since I reincarnated like that then I should just go with the heaven's will. Should....."

He couldn't find any more words to say. I continued to look at him with shining eyes. Chu Kong endured it for a while. Then he stood with inexplicable anger.

"In short, we should just change back! Don't stare at me!"

He turned and stared ferociously at me.

My vision turned away from him and I no longer stared at him. My eyes fell on the big palm on my belly. The warmth of the hand suddenly felt like fire on my belly. Blood flowed through that hand and burned me.

I covered Chu Kong's hand and said: "You have to remember! We have a deal! You say that!"

Chu Kong stiffened. His eyes fell on my face. He looked for a long while and then gritted his teeth: "Yes, ah. I said that.....My mouth is cheap!"

There's pain again on my abdomen. I tolerated it for a while and then said: "Let's first look at our surroundings. Staying here is also not the answer."

I grabbed Chu Kong's hand and stood up.

"It's not so painful anymore. Let's go look around this place."

Chu Kong glanced at me once and walked in front of me.

"Heng, you said this. Don't cry later to xiaoye and say you're tired."

While I walked, I looked around. I discovered that this cave is really strange. Obviously this cave is surrounded by stones. There's no place where light can come in, but here you can see things with the naked eye. The stalactites are also not so much on the stone. They seemed more like hidden weapons, waiting for an intruder to step on the trap. After stepping on the trap, the stalactites will fall down. The deeper we go into the cave, the more we feel that the intention to kill is obvious.

"Hey," I couldn't help myself from calling Chu Kong, who walked in front of me. "It's really strange here."

"Shh, be quiet."

Chu Kong suddenly stopped. I hurriedly ran to him and stayed tightly behind him. With some panic, I looked around

“What? What’s happening?”

## **Part 2**

---

My voice was still being echoed in the cave, when suddenly we heard an ear-piercing “xiu” sound. A stone arrow came down from above. It ground my ear and went into the ground. I was stunned and looked up at the roof. I pulled at Chu Kong’s clothes.

“This time.....this time is really bad, ah.”

As if to prove that my guess was right. One arrow after another fell from the roof. Chu Kong grabbed my waist. A pain burst in my belly again. I couldn’t hold it for a moment and whined.

Chu Kong said: “Bear it for a moment.”

After this general’s body became Chu Kong’s, it became more useful. He hugged me, this burden and dodged. It seemed effortless when he dodged here and there. The air is filled with arrows and all have been dodged by him.

He stood firmly and looked satisfied at his arm. With some proud, he said: “This body has been trained well. Xiao Xiang Zi, how come you are useless with this body?”

I hold Chu Kong’s waist and thought for half a day, but I couldn’t find any words to refute him.

The princess had a miscarriage before. Later, Chu Kong didn’t know how to nourish a woman’s body and did all sorts of work with this body. Just now, she was in cold water. Now it’s making me feel more painful than death. In contrast to Chu Kong’s triumphant look, I looked more like someone who was just half a step outside a coffin. Chu Kong experienced my pain, so he no longer teased me.

The cave was silent for a long time. Chu Kong suddenly sighed: “Really.....”

I suddenly felt my body stiffen. Chu Kong carried me. I was shocked and clung to his neck. Chu Kong frowned and glanced at me

dissatisfied.

“Really bothering.”

I stared at him. For whom am I suffering this pain now?!

But I thought that it's a good thing that we swapped our bodies, otherwise, the stone arrows would have taken our lives. I weighed the pros and cons, pouted and didn't bicker with him.

Chu Kong paced forward. The speed is faster than when we walked together. Not long after, the light in front of us turned brighter. After turning around a corner, I asked: “Is this the way out?”

I narrowed my eyes to adapt to the light. I looked everywhere and wondered: “Why do I feel that this place is familiar?”

This is a room made of stones. There are a simple table and chairs. In the right corner, there's a stone bed. I tried really hard to find the memories relating to this stone room. Just then Chu Kong laughed coldly.

“Of course it's familiar. Xiao Xiang Zi, did you forget? In the second lifetime, the husband you wanted to marry, didn't he live in such a humble room?”

“Ah!”

In my mind jumped out a purple shadow.

“Zihui!”

The moment I called out that name, Chu Kong's face turned shades darker. I thought, Chu Kong must still be angry because the stone demon made him fall into a trap.

I patted Chu Kong's shoulder to comfort him and also to let him put me down.

“If Zihui live here, then we can let him bring us out. After all, he still needs to repay you a favor.”

“Heng, who wants his help?”



Chu Kong's voice just fell, when the floor suddenly started to shake. Chu Kong's expression turned serious and shouted: "Who is playing tricks in there? Come out!"

The stone room was quiet for a while. A breeze came from the sky and turned around my ear. I hear a female voice say slowly: "Do you know Zihui?"

I opened my mouth, but have yet to answer when Chu Kong said: "Don't know."

It seemed like with this denial, he wanted to erase all the memories of the past. I pouted. This childlike temper of his, how did he develop it?

"Do you know Zihui," The female voice asked again.

Her thoughts seemed to be confusing, waiting for confirmation from other people.

I said: "We know, we know."

A cold breeze blew into the stone room. A light came out from the ground. I subconsciously hid behind Chu Kong. I stuck my head out and looked. I saw a woman in light color clothes, came out from the ground. She stood unsteadily and looked at me and Chu Kong with narrowed eyes.

"You know Zihui?"

Well, I think if I'm not wrong, this woman is a soul. Besides, it's a broken soul. A soul that has been floating on the world for a long time. Usually, I won't be afraid that this female soul can hurt me, but now I have this useless body. It's better to hide behind Chu Kong. I pulling at his clothes tightly and said: "We do know him, but we're not familiar with him."

Chu Kong heard this and looked back at me. Then he turned his head again and asked the woman: "Who are you?"

"I?"

The woman floated around for a while.

"I forgot. I only remember that I'm Zihui's bride. I'm waiting for him here."

I thought for a while. I remembered in the second lifetime stone demon, Zihui pretended to be affectionate in order to deceive a silly and naïve girl. I didn't expect him to be a married man!

Chu Kong turned and looked at me again. This time his eyes obviously showed that he was gloating. I pinched his waist angrily. Chu Kong caught my hand and without blinking an eye, he turned and asked the woman: "Are you the one that dragged us here?"

"Yes....."

"Why?"

"You..... I felt that you two are very dangerous."

She rubbed her head.

"Very dangerous.....I wanted to kill you. But I wasn't careful and dragged you here."

Chu Kong asked: "Why do you not kill us now?"

The woman looked at us confused.

Then she shook her head: "Suddenly, I forgot. Now I think you're not dangerous."

I twitched my mouth. Zihui must have abandoned her because she was really stupid.

She inexplicably floated around the stone table a few times. She seemed to be muttering something to herself. Then she looked up at me: "You said you know Zihui, right?"

I hid behind Chu Kong. Only my eyes stared at her and nodded. The woman suddenly smiled like spring flowers: "Well, can you help me bring Zihui here? I want to see him."

Seeing her smiling so happily, I was a little soft hearted to speak. She has now lost the flesh and her soul is broken. She already delayed the time of reincarnation. She is now unable to enter the

netherworld. She is destined to not have an afterlife. What can she do after she sees Zihui? The two are separated by life and death. Their fate is already scattered.

I didn't answer, but Chu Kong said: "What will we get if we bring Zihui to you? To be honest with you, the idiot behind me cares about the pros and the cons, but xiaoye's heart is made from steel. You can say that husband of yours, Zihui, already owe me a lot of debt. Xiaoye was just contemplating how I can let him pay back. Now I have to help, ah, why?"

I poked at Chu Kong, and whispered: "Can you stop pouring salt on the wound? Is it fun playing a villain? Seeing the woman like that, can you still blackmail her?!"

Chu Kong narrowed his eyes and looked at me: "Why can't I?"

The woman heard Chu Kong's words and was in a trance for a moment. She looked up and said: "I.....I don't know what Zihui own you, but there's nothing here that I can repay you with.....should I just pay you back with my body?"

I didn't wait for Chu Kong to answer. I jumped from behind Chu Kong and stood in front of him.

"No!"

My voice was so loud that even I was scared.

# Chapter 31

---

## Part 1

---

This shout of me echoed for a long time before it stopped. My face slowly began to burn while my voice was echoing. I turned and glanced once at Chu Kong. He was also staring at me.

“Ah.....sorry, I didn’t know you two are in such a relationship.”

The voice of the woman came in our direction. A touch of blush quietly spread from Chu Kong’s neck to his ears.

I swallowed, shook my head and gained back my sanity. I stared at the girl ferociously: “What nonsense are you sprouting?! I and he don’t have any relationship!”

Although the bodies that I and Chu Kong are using did have a relationship.....

The woman continued to say naively: “Then why are you *eating vinegar*<sup>[1]</sup>?”

This.....this really is a really good question. My face burned. I rubbed my forehead and said: “Who was eating vinegar? I..... I just wanted to remind you that you’re already married to Zihui. You should not have a second heart. A woman should not serve two husbands.”

She punched her head.

“Just now I’ve forgotten that I was married to Zihui.”

She must really have been abandoned because she was stupid!

“Blame it because so much time has passed.”

The woman looked at the roof.

“I’ve waited for so long that my memory isn’t good anymore.”

Her speech was really slow. I couldn't bear to tell her that she has indeed waited for too long. So long that even the last power of the soul is beginning to fade away. If she continued to wait, someday, she'll completely disappear from this world.

"Why do you want to wait for Zihui here? Why don't you go look for him?"

The soul turned this way; if she haven't waited in this place for thousands years, then it must be for at least a century.

The girl shook her head.

"I don't remember. But I remember I can't leave here."

She looked at me full of hope.

"So can you help me bring him here? I'll repay his debt. I'll find any ways to repay."

I turned and glanced at Chu Kong once. Chu Kong shook his head stubbornly: "I don't want to help. That stone demon isn't a good thing."

"No, you're wrong," the girl anxiously retorted after hearing Chu Kong. "Zihui is really good. He's really good."

"Oh, if your Zihui is so good, why did he leave you in this place? Your soul is so damaged; you must've stayed here for hundreds of years now. Why didn't he miss you? Why didn't he come personally to retrieve you? He is your husband, but he doesn't care deeply about you and is still thinking of finding new love."

Chu Kong paused. I felt that his words have a deeper meaning. I instantly looked at him. He gave me a cold stare, and then he continued: "Such a cold hearted stone demon. You tell me, what's good about him?"

The woman was silent for a long time. Her translucent body sat down on the stone the chair. She covered her face and shivered.

"I'm sorry, I was not good enough....."

Chu Kong hasn't answered yet, but I couldn't stand it anymore. I stretched my hand and covered his mouth. Then I said: "Lady, don't cry. Who is good or who is bad; in this short-lived life we can't say that clearly. I'm different from this man who argues with you. I'll help you."

Chu Kong pushed my hand away and said gloomily: "Do you want to be beaten?"

I ignored him. I felt that now he won't use his hands against me.

The girl heard my promise. She stayed at the table for a while. Then she floated excitedly to me, while she is saying thanks. She stopped three steps away from me and said: "Your.....your body has a bad smell."

I was surprised, raised my hand and sniffed. Chu Kong used this body to train together with the soldiers. It's tainted with men's blood sweats. But when we fell into the river most of it has been washed away. At this point, there's really no smell on this body. I stared at the woman.

"There's no smell, ah."

"There's.....," the girl retorted. "You have to be careful....."

She seemed to have remembered something and was about to say it, but no sound came out of her mouth. She clutched her head and squatted on the ground. It seemed very painful.

I was scared seeing her like that and was about to go to her, but Chu Kong pulled me behind him.

"Do you think you're still an immortal? A soul entering a body can easily die."

I was silent and honestly stood behind him.

That woman squatted for a while and then slowly stood up. With a weak voice, she said: "Excuse me.....what was I about to say? I forgot again."

I didn't dare to let her remember anymore and said: "It's alright if

you can't remember."

The woman looked at me apologetically.

"Thank you for willing to help me. I'm really sorry for frightening you before. Now I'll send you out."

Her body floated to the right of the stone room. Half of her body went inside the wall. She turned and beckoned to us: "Come."

My mouth twitched: "Lady, we're mortals. We don't have the ability to walk through walls."

She said laughingly: "This is not a wall. You come and try."

Chu Kong went first. I was still standing there stupidly. Chu Kong turned, looked at me and raised an eyebrow.

"Do you still want to stay here for a while? Seeing his things, thinking about that person?"

In my heart, I was thinking why this guy is getting angry.....

Chu Kong was impatient and grabbed my hand. He dragged me to the wall. The woman disappeared in the wall. Chu Kong took me and also went in the wall. We crossed it easily.

Crossing the wall, we're in another cave. The woman waited by a cliff and murmured: "Follow this cave and you will be able to go out."

Her figure flashed and then disappeared in the air. Only a lingering voice can be heard: "If you see Zihui, you must tell him that a Luo is still waiting for him. I.....just remember this. Thank you."

The sound drifted away. I turned and touched the wall that was blocking us just now. I put my hand inside.

I was surprised and asked: "Illusion?"

A damaged soul that can create an illusion! This knowledge surprised me a lot. Before if this woman hasn't become a god, then she must be a demon creating great mess in the world.

Chu Kong glanced at me and sneered coldly: "Casually agreeing to

the request of strangers. In this world nothing is as simple as you think.”

I pouted: “What does it matter? Anyway, she didn’t harm our lives.”

“At first, she wanted to harm our lives.”

After Chu Kong said that he turned and walked away. My steps were small. He walked too fast. The pain in my belly gave another jolt. I pulled his sleeves.

I don’t know since when, but when I’m alone with Chu Kong I’ll get more daring. My face will also get thicker skinned. Perhaps it’s because that in front of this man, I’ve already been in the ugliest situations.....

Even if I’m pouting now, I asked him the question that the woman has asked me: “Chu Kong, why are you eating vinegar?”

## **Part 2**

---

Chu Kong halted. His body stiffened and he was silent for a long time. Suddenly he turned and looked ferociously at me: “Which one of your eyes saw me eating vinegar?!”

“All two has seen it.”

Chu Kong walked away.

“You’re thinking too much. Xiaoye doesn’t have the free time to eat vinegar.”

I quickened my steps.

“You’re eating it now.

He gritted his teeth: “I didn’t.”

I shook my head and sighed: “In front of me you’ve done many things that pointed out that you like me. Why do you still refuse to be honest?”

Chu Kong stopped. I couldn’t stop in time and bumped in his back.



Suddenly Chu Kong grabbed me and spun me around. My back felt painful. Chu Kong is pressing me against the stone wall. The smell of man on his body stained all my feelings. Obviously.....not long ago, it was my own smell, but when it's one another person, it let my heart beat chaotically.

Chu Kong seemed set to do this. He reversed his position.

With one hand he is holding both my wrists above my head on the wall. With another hand, he raised my chin to force me to look at him. Such a scene is filled with ambiguous feelings and full of challenges.

I could feel his breath on my face: "So, Xiao Xiang Zi."

His voice turned hoarser full of temptation: "Why do you refuse to be a little more honest?"

He stared at me. The distance was so close; I could see into his eyes.

I blinked and looked at the top of his head: "I have been very honest, ah."

"Oh, then say, what's your heart thinking about now?"

He blew against my ear, getting my ear warm and itchy. I moved my hands and wanted to scratch the itch, but Chu Kong held me tighter.

"Be good and say it honestly."

I was silent for a moment and then honestly said: "The blood of the period is dripping too much. The pocket can't hold it anymore. We should get out of this place very fast and find a place to change it."

The strength grabbing my hand loosened. I saw that Chu Kong was with a burned stunning expression.

I took the opportunity to get my hands free and clutched my stomach. I walked forward without any expression: "Let's go out."

I don't know what Chu Kong's expression is now. I only heard him pat his face and sighing bitterly. He said: You're too honest."

At this time, even if I'm really thick skinned, I can't help that my whole face turned red. Chu Kong's breath and a man's warmth are still lingering at my ears.

While I was fighting with the big storm, I howled in my heart: "Where the hell did you learn these tricks! Seducing people.....can you not be so successful?!"

We followed what the female soul said. Not long after we saw the sunlight. Obviously we stayed in the cave for a short time, but seeing the sun again, I got a happy feeling. I ran out in joy. Gradually my ear heard the sound of the river flowing. Out of the cave, I narrowed my eyes to adapt to the sun. I saw that before us is a pebble shoal. I took a few more steps and hear the cheerful flowing of the river again. I looked up and saw at the other side of the river is a cliff. It's where I and Chu Kong fell.

I looked back at the cave and said with some emotion: "This place is actually not where Zihui used to live. Why are the things inside the placed the same as at Zihui's?"

"Do you still have to ask?"

While walking, Chu Kong regained his usual composure. He glanced at me once dissatisfied.

"A dead woman's most memorable memory is the moments she lived in happiness. That place must be an illusion created by her memories. The wall is false; the other things are then also false."

I nodded and said with some emotion: "The one who is really seeing things and thinking about the person, is her."

Chu Kong touched his chin and thought for a while: "Just now did she say she is called a Luo?"

"En, it should be her. Is something wrong with this name?"

"No."

Chu Kong looked wistfully back at the cave.

"I just thought about something that happened a long time ago in

heaven.”

“What?”

Chu Kong glanced at me again.

“It happened before someone turned into an immortal. Even if I said it you won’t know.”

At the words “turned into an immortal” I narrowed my eyes.

I looked at Chu Kong dissatisfied. Before I could speak, he said: “Say, did you see who that female soul resembled? Well.....you can also say who looked like that female soul?”

I looked at Chu Kong and said: “Who? You?”

“Haha, what a joke,” Chu Kong laughed coldly. “In xiaoye’s memories, the one who is also so stupid is the you from the previous lifetime, the downright stupid silly Xiang. Don’t you feel that silly Xiang looked very much like this female soul?”

I was startled and didn’t first refute Chu Kong. I honestly tried to find the memory of silly Xiang and compared it to a Luo. I felt that they are quite alike in some ways. I carefully pondered. A Luo said that Zihui is her husband. When they were alive they must’ve been in love before they turned into husband and wife. Zihui must also have liked this a Luo. Seeing that a Luo has already died for a long time, she and Zihui must be in love before silly Xiang was born. Well.....having concluded that; Zihui wanted to marry me in the second lifetime, can part of the reason be because I looked like his “ex” .....

I was still pondering when Chu Kong laughed heartily: “Ha, knowing that someone liked you not because you have charms, I suddenly feel physically and mentally relaxed, haha.”

“Can you not laugh so cheap?”

“This laugh of mine is called fun.”

I and Chu Kong have just begun arguing when suddenly a hoarse cry came from the distant: “General!”

I looked up and saw Chu Yi leading dozens of soldiers running towards us.

“Is general alright?”

I opened my mouth and subconsciously wanted to answer. Chu Kong was a step faster than me: “All is alright. Where’s the army?”

“General, don’t worry. The army is at the front. The wounded are receiving treatments.”

“Good,” Chu Kong nodded. “Follow ben jiang back to the camp. When I’ve ordered the army, we’ll enter Jinyang.”

“Yes!”

I heard Chu Kong chuckling beside me: “Xiaoye will let Wei country regret they came to this world.”

Hey.....Chu Kong, you’re serious?

---

## Notes

1. *Eating vinegar means getting jealous.*

## Chapter 32

---

When we arrived at the camp it's midnight. Jingyang which is occupied by Wei country's army is only twenty miles away. The moment Chu Kong arrived at the camp, he began preparing for the war. I lay in the general's camp, clutching my and rested with a peaceful heart.

Outside the tent everyone was busy. I didn't need to move a finger. I feel happy by itself. This is really what I want to pursue in life, ah.

With the state my body is in right now, I'm not suitable to live with the other soldiers. I have been sleeping in the general's tent. At night, I sleep with the general. At day Chu Kong is so busy that even his shadow can't be seen. Then I also sleep in the tent. Not long after there's a rumor about the general liking man and can't even be apart from him when going to a war. In my heart, I feel wronged for the deceased general Chu Qinghui. This is really called not protecting someone's name.

Every day, I was too relaxed. Chu Kong sat all day by the candle thinking about tactics. He forgot about escaping and I also accidentally forgot it.....

Just because he is wearing an armor now, his expression turned more serious. He looks a lot like Lu Hai Kong from the first lifetime. That lifetime Lu Hai Kong was saddled with a blood feud. Not even a half smile can be seen on his face. He pretended to be mature at such a young age. He alienated himself and was difficult to get close to. Everytime, I thought about him trying to walk with a straight back, I couldn't help but sigh. Even now it's the same.

Then I didn't know how to be hurt for other people. I didn't give Lu Hai Kong comfort. Not even once. Now I'm afraid that it's still the same.

At day, Chu Kong will arrange the military affairs in the barracks. I'll sit quietly outside the tent and watch him. At night, he will frown

while staying up all night. I'll lie on the bed and stare blankly at him. It's such a strange fate. They are the same person and not the same person. When I thought that that person has disappeared from this world completely, he'll occasionally appear in this form before me, making me almost unable to tell who is Chu Kong and who is Lu Hai Kong.

What also made me confused and I couldn't tell apart is the feelings I have for Chu Kong right now. Are they left by silly Xiang or is it that my heart has moved inadvertently? Either way, there's one thing I have no way of.....denying.

Silly Xiang from the previous lifetime was dependent of shifu like how she was dependent of air. Such feelings of dependency went got into the bones and went into the veins. They couldn't get out anymore. Hiding behind him, pulling his sleeves will let me feel a sense of security. Am I myself or am I silly Xiang? I couldn't tell anymore. Maybe this is something that isn't clear. I am me; that fool is also me.

A "pu" sound came from where Chu Kong was sitting at his desk. He put down his brush, turned his head, stared at me and said: "From the day before yesterday I wanted to ask did I steal your meat or did I not give you a bed to sleep at night? Why are you staring at me gloomily all day and all night?"

I looked at him blankly. My soul hasn't returned to my body yet, but my mouth asked: "You say, how can you fall in love with someone?"

Chu Kong was surprised by my question and stayed quiet for a while. Suddenly he said ferociously: "How the fuck would I know?!"

He seemed like he really hated my question.

I wondered: "Don't you like me? Come say it. What do you like about me? How did you fall in love with me?"

Chu Kong crushed the brush in his hand with a "pu" sound. He gritted his teeth and said: "Don't push your luck."

"So you also don't know."

I have a sense of loss. In the end why would you fall in love with someone.....

Somehow, in my mind flashed that day in the dark cave. Chu Kong's ambiguous and hoarse voice blowing in my ear, making it all hot and itchy. My ears inexplicably got hot. I was silent for a while. The whole tent went silent. Suddenly I heard Chu Kong coughed lightly. I looked up and saw him picking up the brush again. He dipped in the ink again.

"Don't you know," he asked. "Once.....once you've fallen in love with Lu Hai Kong. Why did you fall in love?"

Why did I fall in love with Lu Hai Kong? This question of him is really difficult for me. I wondered for a long time before I replied: "Probably because.....he was easy to bully."

Letting people bully him and didn't resist even a little bit. I thought for a moment and then said: "Maybe it's also because he is only gentle to me."

Thinking about the really tired Lu Hai Kong who still insists to smile in front of me, I couldn't help but feel warm in my heart. I smiled, but the next moment I felt sour again. I buried my head in silence.

It took me a while to dissipate the rest of my emotions. I looked up and was surprised to see Chu Kong with a serious expression. The complexity in his eyes is something I couldn't understand.

I sighed: "You don't need to be like that. I know he isn't you."

Chu Kong blinked and hanged his head. He leisurely wrote a few words on the paper with the brush. Then he spoke again: "Don't think that other people are as stupid as you."

He continued: "I always know who I am and who is me."

His words are too profound. It's beyond what I can understand. I pondered for a while. I felt that discussing the topic of love with a man really won't get any result. So I changed the subject in a sensible way: "I didn't see it before, but you also know how to go into war. You really played the character of the general well."

“There are many things you don’t know.”

I glanced at me once. Then he resumed his daily prideful self.

“Before xiaoye worked for the Morning God, I was in the military.”

I thought for a moment and then said: “That’s right, only there can there be a god who can tolerate that temper of yours.”

Chu Kong’s mouth twitched: “You go sleep to death early.”

I did as he wished. I closed my eyes, stretched my legs, wrapped myself in the quilt and slept.

After surveying the training for several days, Chu Kong finally put on his armor and struck right in. I was left with a few soldiers to guard the food supplies. Naturally, I was left behind, while the others guard the food. To me this isn’t any different from a normal day. It’s just that the camp is a lot quieter now. I opened the curtain of the tent and didn’t see the busy Chu Kong’s shadow.

In the afternoon, fireworks can be heard from Jinyang city. It seemed that Chu Kong made quite a big shock. I was bored and brew a pot of tea. I stretched my legs and watched the sky.

Suddenly there is movement from where the soldiers are guarding the food. My heart went into panic. I hesitated a lot. I thought that Chu Kong will agree to go to the mountains only if he wins this battle. For him but also for myself, helping him a little isn’t wrong.....

I hid a dagger, carried a sword in my hand and quietly went over there. Sure enough, dozens of people in black are fighting with the soldiers guarding the food. Some of them took the opportunity to set fire and burned the food. Here you can see the fireworks of Jinyang. This means that at Jinyang you can also see the black smoke from here.

This time the backyard was on fire. War is an inevitable mess of morals. Chu Kong wants to win; it may be difficult.....

I am now a weak woman with a very weak body. I will be pulled off the ground with just a gust of wind. I have no ability to act recklessly.



I can only hide behind a tent and carefully observe the people in black. Although they are dressed the same, but there's always a leader. If he is killed, the others will be easy to handle.

I looked carefully for a moment. I gradually found out that these people in black are unintentionally guarding a small person and obey his command. I chuckled in my heart. It's you.

## Chapter 33 Ending fourth lifetime

---

I looked at the sword in my hand. With my ability now, I wouldn't even be able to beat the weakest of them. I looked at left and right and found a crossbow not far away from me. My heart felt happy. I quietly went to it and picked it up.

Here the fight is going on like drums. Suddenly a black shadow cast over my back. My heart went in shock. Immediately I turned. Without thinking I shot an arrow. It went straight into the person in black's crotch. His eyes behind the black cloth widened. He shook loudly. I am afraid I can't be tired now.

He fell down covering his crotch. My heart felt that this move is out of desperation, but still too insidious. I busily apologized to him, but the person lying on the ground didn't move anymore. The air was silent for a moment, then a woman's voice shouted: "Capture her! She is Qi country's princess Qingling!"

I turned and looked. It's the small person who is commanding. He.....is actually a woman. And her voice is inexplicable familiar. I thought for a moment and realized: "Xinyun!"

I didn't have the time to savor the feeling, when I felt pain in my neck. My eyes began to close from dizziness. This is bad, I thought. This time I'm really going to the netherworld to kiss Yanwang! Will Chu Kong come look for me? Finding that I am missing, will he be panic stricken like Lu Hai Kong? Suddenly I want to see his expression when he is in disarray. Such a prideful person and besides, he cares about face; even if he need to fake it, he'll act like he's calm. Not to mention he didn't need to go into chaos because of me. We both know that we will not "die".

When I woke up again, my whole body was unbearable cold. Although the period has finished, this cold makes me feel bone piercing uncomfortable. I rubbed my arm and looked in four directions. I wondered where this forest is. The snow on the ground was swept. A bunch of people in black were sitting together. They

didn't light a fire. No one spoke. They were silent with their eyes closed. I looked at the iron chain at my feet and gently moved a little. The sound of the chain immediately woke of a few people in black. Even when they were sleeping, they didn't take off the black cloth covering their face. Only exposing their eyes, which were staring at me coldly.

I pouted and whispered: "Can the fire not be lit? It's so cold."

"Do you still think that here is the capital of Qi country, your royal highness," a female voice ridiculed me. "If you wanted to be warm, you shouldn't have followed Chu Qinghui to the battlefield."

I looked and saw Xinyun sitting on a dead tree behind me. She's now completely different from when she was seducing Chu Qinghui in the capital. I said: "I didn't want to come."

If it isn't because Chu Kong wanted to go to war, I wouldn't be kidnapped to here.

"That Chu Qinghui actually let you follow him to the battlefield?"

Xinyun's tone changed. She jumped of the dead tree and stood in front of me. She lifted my chin.

"What did you use to let such a man lose his head like that....."

I thought for a moment and continued to carry on my good quality which is honesty: "With the body."

We swapped soul and shared a body. In this lifetime, there's no secret between me and Chu Kong.

Xinyun stiffened. Her face turned pale and she let out an ugly smile. She moved her lips close to my ear: "You are taking advantage of your mouth. You're making me feel bad. I will pay you back tenfold. Pay Chu Qinghui back tenfold."

Her hand touched my throat very dangerously.

"After all you like him, he likes you. You two will not be together."

I looked at Xinyun for a moment: "You like Chu Qinghui."

Xinyun stared at me for a long time. Her eyes are full of hatred: "Princess is joking. Didn't you already know about this matter a long time ago?"

"But you are a spy of Wei country."

I felt that when Chu Qinghui was alive, his love life was really pitiful. The two women who love him are on his enemy's side. If he didn't know it'll be alright. But once he knew; these two women who willingly went to him; he can't eat and can't touch. It's something that'll let people have a sour heart. But this general didn't seem to be someone who plays the cards reasonably. First, he got Xinyun pregnant, then he also got the princess pregnant.....

"If this is how it is."

She grabbed a bunch of my loosened hair and twisted them lightly in her hand.

"If I can't have him, you also can't have him. Now I'm not afraid to admit that Chu Qinghui didn't let me get you the bowl of abortion medicine. I just wanted you two to hate each other. Looking at you stabbing the dagger into his heart and then poisoned yourself, do you know how happy I was? Unfortunately, you two didn't die."

Don't feel unfortunate.....the princess and general have been played to death by you.

Finally, the knot in my heart is solved. So the general has been stabbed by the princess. Presumably, Xinyun let princess Qingling drink the abortion medicine in the name of Chu Qinghui. The princess must've felt unwilling. When the general came to visit her, she killed him. It must've been the dagger in my chest when I woke up. The princess must've used all of her strength to get it stuck in my chest. The general is a powerful man and someone who knows martial arts, was stabbed to death by a weak woman. He.....must've been willing.

The princess killed the general and lost the child. She must've been in despair and took the poison.

I sighed in my heart. If I and Chu Kong have drunken the soup of

oblivion, didn't change genders and being reincarnated in the princess and the general's body, from small we'll have this bad fate. It'll get more tangled up when we grow up. This really is a play of pitiful love. Unfortunately.....we changed this love play into a comedy. Heavenly emperor Lee, I'm really sorry.

My scalp felt a pain. Xinyun tugged at my hair. She smiled at me coldly: "But it doesn't matter, letting you feel life is more painful than death is also a good choice."

Looking at this lady playing with fate, I sighed. I believe that every person's heart has a good and honest side. Only when it grows crooked will it become like this. But didn't life force it to become like this?

In order to coordinate with her, I carefully made some recommendations: "Light a fire first, otherwise you haven't played enough, I'll already be frozen to death."

Xinyun stared at me for a moment: "You seem different from before."

Naturally, a princess carrying the honor of a country won't bow to anyone. And I.....in order to see Yanwang a bit later, will not care about temporarily lowering myself to someone.

"Get ready, we'll be going," Xinyun shouted the order.

I saw the group of people in black getting up quickly and formed a row.

Xinyun looked at me with indifference. In the bottom of her eyes there's sarcasm.

"Princess Qingling is feeling cold. Maybe she'll feel better walking with us."

I looked at Xinyun. Suddenly I have the impulse to drag her to the road to the netherworld with me. This lady's heart is too evil. Let's go back and recycle her soul.

Following this group of Wei country's spies is a hardship. The days

are cold. Fire can't be lit in day or night. Day and night we need to hurry. Every day there's only a little time for resting.

Originally the princess' body is already in a bad state. Now it has gone through such hardship. First catching a cold then I began to vomit blood. My eyes couldn't see things clearly anymore. My feet felt so heavy that it's difficult to lift them. Unless I was being bound by a rope and dragged on the ground, I wouldn't be able to move the slightest.

Xinyun is determined to leave me in the wilderness full of snow. At this point I'm hoping she just kill me with one blow. It'll be more comfortable. Even if I struggle, I wouldn't be able to live more than twenty years.

I didn't know how much time has passed. My body is already numb to cold and pain. I opened my eyes and saw the sunlight. I closed my eyes and saw the road to the netherworld becoming clearer.

Between life and death, I seem to see a man anxiously running towards me. Death penetrated me. I crossed the road and then.....

I felt a fierce slap. He shook me.

"Open your eyes! See what happens when you dare to close your eyes!"

Damn you.....was there a hero who saves the beauty like the way you do?

Let's not talk about you being late, but you're also rude.

"I'll take you to go see a physician."

Chu Kong lifted me. He took two steps and scolded: "I told you that you're not allowed to sleep in the snow! Not allowed to close your eyes in the snow!"

After those words left his mouth, my heart felt empty. My soul disappeared for a moment.....So I closed my eyes in his embrace.

The road to the netherworld opened in front of me. No soul collector came to lead the way. I didn't hurry. Without the chains, without the

cold and pain of torture, I stood quietly beside Chu Kong and silently stared at him.

There are many stubbles on this general's face. The chasing of the last few days made him look a little haggard. His body was stiff. His hand touched the princess's neck. I thought, he wouldn't be able to feel the pulse. Chu Kong obviously knows I wouldn't "die". But that expression in that moment made me suddenly remember Lu Hai Kong from many years ago. That boy's sadness hid in my heart, but Chu Kong took it out inadvertently.

"Stupid.....thing."

Chu Kong gritted his teeth. I didn't know if he was cursing me or himself, but I can hear in his voice the hidden injuries that I can't ignore. What kind of bad memories brought snow to him?

I sighed and was about to embark the road to leave when suddenly Chu Kong said: "If you're still here, listen very well."

I honestly stopped and listened.

"This debt, I'll get it back for you."

I nodded. This is a must. If Chu Kong doesn't abuse Wei country a little, then he'll be sorry to me.

He nipped the corpse's lips.

"Also when you go to the netherworld, you're not allowed to kiss Yanwang's cheek."

I twitched my mouth. This is not something I can decide on. If Yanwang force me what can I do?

Chu Kong embraced the corpse for a while.

"You're not allowed to kiss. Remember to wait till I get down."

You must be kidding! When he comes to the netherworld, it's certainly after twenty years. Do I need to wait for him for twenty years down there?

I.....I should just first run away.....

Before embarking the road to the netherworld, I turned and looked at Chu Kong's lopsided back once; Lonely and desolate. It doesn't seem like his always straight spine; Stubborn and yet trying to be brave. I suddenly felt that perhaps waiting for him twenty years, thirty years, it's no big deal.



# Chapter 34

---

## Part 1

---

Reentering the netherworld. I looked at the tall plaque on the door for a long moment and sighed. Then with a determined mentality I went to Yanwang's palace while the little ghost watched me.

I opened the door of Yanwang's palace. Surprisingly, I didn't hear the sound of Yanwang's snoring. Only on a small table beside Yanwang's enormous desk, the magistrate is buried into a pile of cases. He was busily writing. Even when I came in he didn't look up and just throw out a few words: "Do you have some business here? Say it."

"Eh.....I'm here again."

After saying that, the magistrate finally lifted his head from the table and glanced at me once. Then he buried his head and continues to work.

"En, I see."

I totally didn't expect such a cold treatment. I waited for a while and thought that short termed pain is better than long termed pain and asked: "Where is Yanwang? I have come to receive my punishment."

The magistrate replied coldly: "Went on a business trip to heaven. Not back yet."

My eyes lit up: "Then can I just go to reincarnate and don't have to bother about him?"

The magistrate looked at me coldly again with an "don't even think about it" expression.

"Wait quietly in the netherworld."

I sighed and asked: "Then how long do I have to wait?"

“One day in heaven is one year in the mortal realm. Yanwang is almost gone for a year. He will be in heaven for about two, three days.”

This means two three years here, ah! Having an endless immortal life, waiting for a couple of years is not too long. But having been living as a mortal, I also began to care about time.

Two three years.....it'll be enough for Chu Kong to defeat Wei country.

I picked up my good mood and was about to walk out of Yanwang's palace to take advantage of this two three years free time in the netherworld when the magistrate coldly stopped me: “Where are you going?”

“I'm going to take a two year long vacation by traveling in the netherworld.”

“Long vacation?”

After the magistrate heard those two words, his eyes flashed green. He fiercely threw all the files on the table onto the ground and stood up.

“You dare to mention long vacation in front of me! The netherworld lacks people, so there isn't one ghost who will stay a year without doing anything, you know?! Staying up overnight, working overtime won't get paid, do you know?! Even working when you're sick is very normal, do you know?! You actually dare to go on a vacation traveling in the netherworld?! Very good, very good. I see; you immortals coming down to reincarnate is just to torment us. Very good, very good. I understand. When Yanwang come back I'll make him let you lick the ghost shoes to let you taste how bitter taste like.....”

I rubbed my forehead and waved: “I understand, I understand. You want me to help, I'll help.”

The magistrate sat again. While writing, he said: “First help me pick up the files and put them in order. On Yanwang's table there're many documents that need to be stamped. On the left they need to be

stamped. On the right, they need to be crossed. You just do this simple job.”

When I finished it was lunchtime. While I was thinking about that, I honestly sat down on Yanwang’s seat. Under the table I saw a bunch of documents that still need to be done. I was instantly dumbfounded: “This.....why is this Yanwang usually not busy?”

The magistrate said without expression: “Because the things he left, I’ll need clean up after him while he is on a business trip. If I don’t clean them, his things will be left here.”

I said: “If that’s so, you can just pretend you didn’t clean and didn’t see the things.”

The magistrate looked at me coldly. I sat down and began to work. But the fact is that I and Yanwang isn’t the type to do desk work.

Working for less than seven days, I’m beginning to look left and right and being unable to concentrate. I’m beginning to understand a little why Yanwang will have that kind of expression after he saw me and Chu Kong come down to the netherworld. He will expose such an expression of excitement, because the netherworld’s life really is too boring. It’s difficult to look for something fun.....

I climbed onto Yanwang’s desk. There’s a hard thing blocking my face. I curiously unplug the hard thing. Inside it is a mirror. This mirror felt a little familiar. I asked the the magistrate: “What is this?”

The magistrate’s gaze swept over me.

“The mirror of the past. You have to work.”

I ignored the other half of what he said and asked: “For what can it be used?”

“To see the past life of the one whom your heart wants to see. I said you have to work!”

I nodded and ignored the other half of what he said. Then I looked into the mirror with my eyes wide open. Suddenly I remembered. Didn’t Yanwang use this thing to let me see Lu Hai Kong from that

lifetime? Then I didn't have the heart to watch. Now.....I still can't bear to watch.

My heart was thinking that. Suddenly the mirror began to move volatility. I saw a familiar face. It's general Kong. He is wearing a heavy armor riding a warhorse. The aura he's emitting go well together with the position of a general. So I actually couldn't believe that the man I saw in the mirror is the same prideful and with a bad mouth, Chu Kong.

So, when I couldn't see him, Chu Kong will also have this expression. This expression of his looks like Lu Hai Kong who was burdened with hatred but whom has a soft heart.....

At least, this is what I saw.

“Kill!”

He raised the long sword and went straight ahead. The noise of the battlefield and the numerous people screaming went into my ears. His murderous aura seemed to pass through the mirror and made me shudder. I put down the mirror. I didn't want to continue to look.

Unexpectedly, the next few days my heart became serious. I repeatedly crossed and stamped. Or maybe my heart didn't become serious, but was absent-minded.

One day, I hesitated to stamp. I asked the magistrate: “You say, does Chu Kong still remember the things of Lu Hai Kong from that lifetime?”

The magistrate glanced at me once: “Do you still remember the lifetime when you drank the soup of oblivion?”

I nodded.

The magistrate hmfed coldly: “Then isn't it solved?”

“But.....I mean.”

I thought for a while how to put it in language: “Does that lifetime's feelings also stay?”

In my opinion what silly Xiang left for me from that lifetime is only reliance on Chu Kong and the inexplicable trust in him.

Although I know that silly Xiang from that lifetime is entrusted to an immortal.

Facing with my question, the magistrate said categorically: "If you ask celestial star Chu Kong, I only have one answer."

I looked at him with my eyes wide open. The magistrate said: "Are you blind? Can't you see that he always liked you?"

## **Part 2**

---

"Like", although I always joke with Chu Kong about this word, but suddenly hearing it from another person's mouth, my face turned red in an instant.

"Is is is.....is it like that, ah? So it was true, ah. I always just joked about it.....So it's true.....he truly li.....likes me, ah. Really.....really hateful! I'm so shy!"

The magistrate mouth twitched: "Don't pretend to be innocent. This isn't like you!"

I said dissatisfied: "You just let me pretend for a little while. Suddenly hearing such a thing, the feelings of a woman in me will still feel shy. Give them a chance!"

"Then you continue."

I turned. My cheeks really burned slightly. I think.....perhaps this is also a feeling that silly Xiang left for me.

I thought for a while on the desk and then too out the mirror of the past. I didn't have the time to say what my heart is thinking when the mirror began to move. I can see general Kong's face. Now he's sitting with tilt legs on an armchair. It's totally different from a few days ago when he was on the battlefield. By this time, he stood in front of a woman who is bound and lying on the floor. I narrowed my eyes and saw that's actually Xinyun.

Chu Kong and Xinyun.....

“You say, what do you like?”

Chu Kong sipped tea and his eyes fell on Xinyun. Even under such circumstances, in front of Chu Kong Xinyun didn't forget to smile: “What *qieshen*<sup>[1]</sup> likes, don't general already knows?”

The implication is that she likes the general. I pouted. If inside the general's body is still me I will urinate on her and then ask her if she still likes me. Definitely ruining the image of the general in her heart.

Chu Kong listened to her words and nodded: “To be honest, I did carefully investigate things that you like. Luomei hairpin, rosewood beads, blue and white velvet robe.....If I remembered correctly, these are all the things I gave to you.”

Xinyun shyly nodded. Chu Kong narrowed his eyes and smiled.

If I remembered correctly, this smile of his meant that he is conspiring something.

“That time you left in hurry and all these things has been left at my other mansion in the capital. These few days, I have ordered people to bring them for you. Take a look. Are these your most favorite things?”

Xinyun didn't dare to look at Chu Kong directly. With dazed eyes and with some warmth, she said: “General.....”

I sighed. Lady, you're too serious. How can you take Chu Kong so seriously? He is poison, ah. That's something toxic!

“Are you sure that these are it?”

“En, that's right.”

The gentleness in Xinyun's eyes turned into a mass of light.

“Very good,” Chu Kong nodded.

His voice changed and he said: “Smash them. Those that are made of cloth, burn them.”

Xinyun's eyes turned blank. She watched some rough man smashing her favorite thing into pieces.

She looked at Chu Kong blankly: "Why? Chu Qinghui, are you taking revenge because I killed princess Qingling?"

She couldn't conceal the hatred in her heart. Her expression turned crazy. It's the same as how she looks at "me" then.

"Do you want to take revenge on me so much?! For that bitch! You give everything to her! Status, wealth and a child! You gave her everything! Even our only time did you call her name! What's bad about me?! What's bad about me?!"

Chu Kong stared quietly at her: "There's nothing good about you. Voice too shrewd, talking too much nonsense, heart is too malicious. The worst is that your hand is too shrewd. You played with my toy and broke it. Xiaoye is in a bad mood. I also want to play and break you a little. Continue saying, what more do you like? What more do you still care about? I will ruin them for you to see."

"Hehe, you want to take revenge, then take it!"

I deeply feel that these two people dialogues are not on the same level.

Xinyun said full of hate: "Before between you two is the affairs of the court. You couldn't be together. Now you couldn't be together even more! You will never see each other again! In this life, Chu Qinghui, you won't be able to live nice and comfortable!"

If these words fell on the real general's ears, it can cause some harm.

Chu Kong frowned and dug in his ear: "Block her mouth. Her shrewd mouth is too noisy."

He circled around Xinyun and said: "You only listen. Xiaoye wants to deal with you just because you need to be dealt with. I will not use my hands against a woman.

My heart silently said: "Liar."

Chu Kong continued: “.....So, after you finish this life, don't reincarnate and appear in front of me, otherwise, I'll deal with you every time I see you.”

Chu Kong ordered some people to drag her out. He sat alone drinking tea in the armchair. Suddenly facing the empty hall, he sighed and then murmured: “She must not have kissed yet, right?”

I was stunned to hear this nonsense sentence of him. Like a fool I giggled in front of the mirror. The magistrate beside me hit me on the head with a stack of files: “Work hard!”

In quiet a good mood, I put down the mirror of the past. I thought that when I couldn't see Chu Kong, he is so honest and cute, ah! He really is a child whom the mouth says something but the heart doesn't mean it.

If now I can't see Chu Kong, I probably will also miss him.....right?

That being said, I seemingly also.....likes him.....right?

I buried my head in the pile of files. Suddenly I'm a little worried that the temperature of my face will burn down the files.

The days in the netherworld passed with me taking a peak in the mirror of the past from time to time. In a blink of eye I stayed for more than two years in the netherworld.

In the mirror of the past, most of the time in these two years Chu Kong led the army and reconquered the lands occupied by Wei country and he conquered five more lands of Wei country. The citizens of the Wei country handed down a decree saying that they are surrendering. Chu Kong teared down the decree, let Wei country pay the damages and Wei country need to promise to be under Qi country for fifty years. Wei country's monarch struggled a lot, so Chu Kong ate three more cities.....Finally Wei country's monarch accepted Chu Kong's conditions.

Under the summon of Qi country's emperor, Chu Kong triumphantly returned with the troops to the capital. This time there aren't rumors around the general.



The day he triumphantly returned to the capital the ground was full of snow. Riding high on the horse, looking at the sky, he stopped for a long time and didn't take a step forward. Such a figure of him made me feel desolate and lonely. Perhaps Chu Kong and this thing called snow can't go together.

After he won with such a success, he should be able to enjoy and rest for at least ten years in the mortal realm. Then I and he will really miss each other in the next lifetime.....

After having such a thought, my days became listless. When I can be lazy, I'll try my hardest to be lazy. I'm only waiting for Yanwang to come back, receive my punishment and then go.

In this netherworld where it is all year round without rest, I formed some habits. I will stroll around the bridge before going to Yanwang's palace to work. When I strolled by the road to the netherworld, suddenly from the road came a familiar figure. I stared at him and rubbed my eyes in disbelief. He saw me and his pace halted slightly.

Through the miasma of the netherworld, we stared at each other for a long time. No one spoke. Eventually, he lifted his feet and walked towards me. He stood three paces away from me. I stared at him for a moment. Suddenly seeing Chu Kong in person after seeing him for two years in the mirror, all kinds of complicated feelings came to the surface. I have an impulse to run to him and hug him. This impulse, made my heart feel surprised. I'm busily restraining my mood and smiled at him.

In a blink of eye, I saw him fisting his hands at his sides. Fisted and loosened, loosened and fisted again. It looked like he was restraining from an impulse. Can it be.....he also wants to hug me?

The smile on my face turned more brilliant: "Yo! Long time no see. You did pretty well in the human world....."

I haven't finished yet, when a ghost suddenly came running to me and fiercely bumped me from behind. I staggered. At this time a second ghost bumped into me. I staggered a step further. A third ghost bumped into me. I staggered again. My body couldn't hold it

up and went straight in Chu Kong's embrace.

The ghosts who bumped into me one after another bolted to the other side of the road. Not even their shadows are left, leaving me all embarrassed in Chu Kong's embrace.

I felt his arms on my back and hugging me tightly.....

Really, hugging, ah!

My face felt somewhat hot, but I didn't break away from Chu Kong. I let him hug me. Surprisingly, he also didn't speak, didn't let go, just hugging me tightly.

This.....scene felt really loving ah.....

"Chu Kong," I said after staying quiet for a long moment. I hid the skin of my face and asked: "What do you mean with this?"

Above my head was silent for a long time, before cold voice said: "Xiaoye.....xiaoye's hands got cramps. Temporarily couldn't get them down. Don't think too much."

"I.....I also got cramps on my legs. Just temporarily relying on you. Don't think too much of it."

---

## Notes

1. 妾身 (Qiè shēn): wife. This is a for of addressing oneself in front of your husband or someone you've been intimate with.

## Chapter 35

---

The cheerful tunes of the river played in my ear. Chu Kong's chest brought back some memories of warmth; I went back to that day on Fengxuashan manor and lay on bed with the only shifu in that lifetime. Dependent wholeheartedly on him, wholeheartedly trusted and loved him. Those not loving memories unknowingly slowly disappeared.

I reached out and was about to hold Chu Kong's waist when a familiar figure with a sense of excitement came down from the road.

"Aiya, what am I seeing? Blindly beautiful, oh! Two enemies hugging each other, ah!"

Like someone reckless, I and Chu Kong pushed each other away. We looked with uncertainty.

Yanwang who just came back from heaven was wearing a complex robe. He touched his chin. His pair of bright eyes looked between me and Chu Kong. Yanwang came back to the netherworld and saw me and Chu Kongh, his mood turned happy.

"Don't be nervous. I didn't come to be the little third wheel. You two continue, ah. Just now I saw you two hugging each other. It seemed even your soul will merge together."

"Who's who's soul is merging with her!"

Chu Kong's roar drummed into my ear.

"Xiaoye.....xiaoye just got the cramps! Just the cramps!"

I also roared: "Who wants to hug that thing here! I also just got the cramps!"

"I understand, I understand. I totally understand."

Yanwang smiled cheaply and nodded.

"Youngsters, playing some push and pull is also good."

This guy watching we playing with our heart's feeling must feel happy, ah.

I gave him face and didn't expose him. After all, I and Chu Kong didn't live for twenty years in the mortal realm, we still need to receive punishment from him.....

I didn't finish thinking when Chu Kong suddenly pulled my shoulder. He stared at me seriously and asked: "Have you already kissed?"

I blinked and stayed quiet. Does.....does this mean he cares about me? Seeing general Kong through the mirror, I sometimes can't understand his thoughts. Facing with feelings that were hidden in the shadows and now came to the surface, I couldn't help but feel shy.

While I was still shy to answer, Yanwang touched his chin and smiled: "Already kissed, yo."

The hand on my shoulder tightened. Chu Kong's face darkened. Yanwang continued to laugh: "Kissed fiercely."

The hand pinching my shoulder tightened a little more. He gritted his teeth and said: "Couldn't you wait for me....."

I.....have been waiting for you. Of course, I couldn't say that. So I only glared at Yanwang and asked coldly: "When have I kissed?"

Yanwang continued to laugh: "You miss the gentleman everyday in the netherworld. Not seeing the gentleman you became weak. Such feelings made you become thin. You've certainly become *lighter*<sup>[1]</sup>. Am I wrong?"

I raised an eyebrow. The hand on my shoulder loosened. I was silent for a while and then I understood that he was playing with us. I clearly saw the veins on Chu Kong's forehead pop.

"Yanwang, you actually dared....."

A red whip swept across Yanwang. Yanwang dodged and said: "Aiya, aiya, I was wrong. Celestial star Chu Kong really isn't cute. Just a joke, a joke."

Yanwang was forced to take a few steps back by Chu Kong's whip.

He then stood firmly and smiled: "However, Chu Kong you can see, you have deep feelings for Xiao Xiang Zi. Even your face is green."

He was saying that so excitedly. Chu Kong's face must've turned green because of him.

In order to prevent Chu Kong from running away, I stopped him and said: "Did you forget? We still have to receive punishment from him....."

Chu Kong stiffened, gritted his teeth and reluctantly hid his whip.

Yanwang scratched his head and put an unwilling expression: "You don't need to worry about that....."

His words hardly left his mouth, when on the road to the netherworld abruptly came a white aura of an immortal. I've never been beside such an aura before in heaven. Even my soul is getting stronger with that aura.

At the road stood the three little ghosts who bumped into me. They smiled while walking beside the immortal.

"Great God, this way."

"Great God, no hurry."

Such smiles are totally different from when they bumped into me.

When they got nearer, I saw that in the white aura is great golden star, Taibai. Why isn't he enjoying in heaven? Why did he come to the netherworld?

"Yanwang really walks too fast. I can't keep up with you."

Great golden star Taibai, walked to Yanwang and shook his head.

"This old bones of mine can't move anymore. Your netherworld's miasma is heavier. This old bone can't inhale anymore. Are celestial star Chu Kong and that cloud fairy Xian Zi here? After saying his majesty's will, I need to hurry back."

Yanwang pointed at me: "They are all there."

Great golden star Taibai is famous in heaven for being blind. He took a few steps towards us before he saw us clearly. He nodded: "That's right, that's right. En, his majesty's decree is here."

The old man searched in his sleeves for a long while. He scratched his head and said: "Huh.....where.....where did his majesty decree go to? Aiya, I, this old bone; can it be that I lost it on the way here?"

My mouth twitched. Chu Kong's mouth also twitched: "Isn't it that thing in your sleeves?"

Taibai realized: "Ah, here, here. This old bone's memory is not good. Wait, I'll read it."

Chu Kong said: "Don't. You need to rest. We'll read it ourself."

While saying that, he took the decree from great golden star Taibai. He opened it. His eyebrows raised and his eyes narrowed slightly. He closed the decree and looked at Yanwang: "You'd better explain what is going on."

I was curious and looked at the decree in Chu Kong's hand. Chu Kong gave me a glare. That look said "adult is doing business, children need to wait". I thought I was truly being despised.

Yanwang touched his nose: "Well, in general it's like this. On the eighteenth level of the netherworld a hole has been created. That hole is connected to a mountain from the mortal realm. In order to prevent the evil aura from leaking into the mortal realm, you are hereby ordered to go with Xiao Xiang Zi to fill the hole. Considering that this a difficult task, so the Jade emperor decided to give you two a little reward."

Hearing the word "reward", my mind was stuffed with gold. Excitedly, I asked loudly: "What reward?!"

Yanwang touched his chin. He smiled secretly: "Originally, you still have three lifetimes left. But if you complete this task, you don't need to experience those three lifetimes anymore. Besides heavenly emperor Lee is feeling bitter because there isn't a lifetime where you follows the fate he has written. He doesn't want to arrange a love fate for you anymore."

Hearing this reward I and Chu Kong was blank for a moment. My heart felt inexplicable empty.

Honestly speaking, I always wanted to escape our lifetimes together. But suddenly hearing that I can get rid of Chu Kong in an honest way and go back to heaven to continue be an idle fairy, I actually didn't feel happy.

Chu Kong beside me also went silent.

Yanwang continued: "Taking into account the order of the mortal realm, you still have to reincarnate to go into the mortal realm. In this lifetime you'll use your own body and still have your powers. If you unfortunately died in the mortal realm, you'll still need to come to the netherworld to reincarnate. In short, when you two close the hole, it'll be when you turn back into an immortal and go back to heaven."

I looked at Chu Kong and saw him frown. I asked Yanwang: "What stones need to use to fill that hole. Where are those stones?"

"In the west of Wu mountain, there's white fluorite. This product has the power to eliminate the evil. Using these stones to fill up the hole is the most appropriate thing."

I nodded. Chu Kong threw Jade's emperor decree on the ground and said: "I won't do it. Don't think I don't know. That place is guarded by an ancient beast. Who bothers him, will be roasted. I am not stupid enough to take this task."

Great golden star Taibai picked up the decree and said: "Celestial star Chu Kong doesn't want to go, ah? But his majesty has pointed you and cloud fairy Xian Zi to go do this task."

"Are all the people in heaven dead? There are many who has greater ability than me. Why the hell would he let xiaoye and this thing go risk our lives."

Yanwang said coolly: "Recently only you two committed a mistake. This way, you two can atone. Also you can say that there isn't really a risk. When you accidentally died, it'll just be a trip to the netherworld."

Chu Kong said furiously: “Do you think that every time we died it won’t hurt or what?!”

He was putting strong resistance, while I was silent. According to Yanwang, in fact going to get the stones and going through a love lifetime isn’t really that different. Only the purpose is different. Going through a love lifetime’s purpose is to torment me and Chu Kong. Going to get the stones is to block evil and at the same time torment me and Chu Kong.

Left and right is for tormenting us. But going to get the stones, we can openly not drink the soup of oblivion and also we’ll have our powers. This is a really convenient thing!

Going to the mortal realm with power is a great advantage!

I immediately dragged Chu Kong behind me, took the decree from great golden star Taibai and said: “I am a sensible fairy. The Jade emperor has given me such a great responsibility, I can’t say no!”

Chu Kong pulled my hair and said gloomily: “You want to get whipped?”

Great golden star Taibai nodded: “Good girl, good girl. Is responsible, is responsible.”

Yanwang continued to say coolly: “Well, in that case, let Xiao Xiang Zi go get the stone alone. Celestial star Chu Kong, you can go drink the soup of oblivion and go reincarnate. Ah, this is a really happy arrangement.”

Chu Kong gritted his teeth for a while and was silent. He pulled the decree from my hand fiercely and said: “Getting the stones, then let’s get the stones.”

He glared at me: “You stay far away from me. You’re not allowed to be in my way.”

The implication is “I go take the risk, you hide behind me.”

Ha.....now I can slowly get the hidden meaning behind his words. This is clearly a sentence that can make people feel warm, why is



this guy saying it in such a bad way.....really dishonest.

Yanwang smiled and said: "Aiya, I didn't know that celestial star Chu Kong is a good man who cares about other people."

"Who cares about who?!"

Chu Kong glared at Yanwang.

Yanwang shook his head and sighed: "Really not honest ah. So not cute."

I also sighed: "That's right, really not honest."

Great golden star Taibai nodded: "Not honest, not honest."

Chu Kong's pressed his veins that were about to pop.

"If you want to go get the stone, be faster. Xiaoye doesn't have the free time to dawdle with you."

"Celestial star Chu Kong, wait! This old bone still has something to say."

Great golden star Taibai's eyes lit up and went to Chu Kong's side. He said softly: "Does celestial star Chu Kong know that the heaven has put on a bet? Betting on if you and cloud fairy will end up together or not."

I looked at great golden star Taibai. Chu Kong's mouth twitched: "You people in heaven is really not busy. If you're so free you can go finish that beast at Wu mountain. It'll let me get the stones more easily!"

"Don't be angry celestial star Chu Kong. It was difficult for heaven to get such a pair as yourself. Naturally, we'll concern ourself with you a little more."

He leaned to Chu Kong and whispered: "From what I've observed, I bet three golden taels that you won't be together. Celestial star Chu Kong, don't let me down, ah."

Chu Kong pushed Taibai's head: "Go back to your heaven."

Then he turned and said: “Xiao Xiang Zi, let’s go.”

I searched on my body for a long while and finally dug out a ten copper coins. I stuffed them into great golden star Taibai’s hand and asked solemnly: “When you go back remember to help me make a bet. I bet we’ll not end up together. How much are the odds? How many people have already bet? When the bet is over, when can we get the money…….”

My wrist felt tight. Chu Kong grabbed me. I looked at him and he said full of evilness: “You also have the time to pursuit things, ah.”

I opened my mouth, but didn’t get the time to speak. He turned. He seemed really furious. I immediately went silent and walked to the bridge.

Passing Yanwang, he looked at me smilingly and said: “I bet ten golden taels, you will be together.

I looked at Yanwang stunned. He waved at us and wished us a good journey.

Wait, wait! I struggled a bit. Chu Kong grabbed me tighter. What this Yanwang said still has some value! Wait, wait! I want to change my bet! Ten copper coins, betting we’ll be together! Great golden star, don’t go!

I couldn’t say what was in my heart. Chu Kong pulled me to the well of reincarnation. He didn’t say anything and kicked me into circle of reincarnation.

Wait, wait! That’s ten copper coins, ah! Ten copper coins, ah!

---

## Notes

1. 轻 (qīng): *lighter. Losing weight.* 亲 (qīn): *kiss. They sound the same. Yanwang is playing with them.*

# Chapter 36

---

Darkness. I felt Chu Kong's face above mine. His lips were tightly pressed against my forehead. I took breaths against his neck. His hands are on my back. His chest was pressed against my chest, making me feel a strange pain.

"You're openly.....taking advantage, ah!"

I pushed his chest.

"Motherfucker, breath, breathless!"

"Why the fuck are you hurrying!"

Chu Kong is also angry.

"Do you think I want to be pressed against you?! Just let me lean for a while."

*(Oh, was involuntary? But what about your lips on her forehead, Chu Kong?)*

I continued to breath. The temperature of our body let the snow become water. The water dripped onto my clothes. I shivered from cold.

Just then Chu Kong pressed me more tightly against him. Then I heard a burst. Finally we escaped the small space.

Emerged from the ground.....or better said emerged from the snow.

Standing on the white snow, I and Chu Kong kept gasping for air. I have several layers of clothing soaked in water. At this time a cold wind came by. It froze me into popsicles. This situation is as bad as it can get. As for why our situation is so bad.....

Chu Kong fisted his hand.

"If this is heaven's will, it must be big bearded Lee's revenge!"

I deeply accepted Chu Kong's view.

Because nothing went according to how he has written it, that heaven's dog blood Lee must be angry. And now he will not have the chance to write our life anymore, so he tampered with how we'll come to this world after the reincarnation!

This despicable and petty heavenly emperor Lee let us be caught in an avalanche after reincarnating and burying us alive in it! This is clearly taking revenge while he can! Shameless! Really shameless!

While I was trembling, I said: "Let's.....let's go get some thick clothes.....We haven't even found the stones, we'll be back seeing Yanwang."

Chu Kong has got it together now. He narrowed his eyes while looking at me: "You don't know how to use the immortal's power against cold?"

I was startled. I racked through my brain. After being a mortal for so many years, I actually have forgotten that I have the power of an immortal.

I murmured a spell to disperse all the cold from my body. Then I turned to Chu Kong and said: "Although you reminding about the immortal's power is a good thing, but you took advantage of the opportunity to rub against me."

I sighed while shaking my head: "You deserve to be single."

This is obviously a means of flirting with women. Chu Kong is obviously not as good as me.

Chu Kong stared at me for a while and then said without expression: "What do you have for me to take advantage of?"

My mouth twitched. I felt that this guy must really not be interested in me. His mouth looked like it's wiped in dirt.

I narrowed my eyes and said dissatisfied: "You deserve to be single!"

After saying that, I turned and walked away.

After taking a few steps, I didn't hear Chu Kong's footsteps in the snow. My heart felt it was strange. I turned to look at him. I saw him standing absentminded. A hand was touching his lips, another hand was clutching his chest. His vision was from the snow pit, where we escaped from. His cheeks were inexplicable red.

That, that saying one thing, meaning another thing. What didn't take advantage.....he obviously took advantage!

Chu Kong stood there for a long time. He frowned and thought for a moment. Then he suddenly said: "Do you feel that the snow on this mountain is strange?"

I looked at him seriously: "No."

Chu said frustrated: "Forget it, I was stupid. I actually asked you."

We were silent again. I looked around. The strange thing that I found is that the snow is mixed with some wood. I thought for a while. Suddenly, I crashed into Chu Kong's back. Chu Kong ignored me and said solemnly: "The wrong thing with this snow mountain is that someone put a spell here."

I was confused: "But I didn't see a spell, ah."

"Of course you wouldn't see it," Chu Kong said with dissatisfaction.

"You see the snow on the roadside? It's neat, like someone just cleaned it. You don't need to walk far and there'll be a stone on the roadside. If you look carefully, the distance between the stones is always the same."

I followed Chu Kong speech and looked at the environment. My heart was startled. My face paled: "These things have always been there when we walked down the mountain. Someone actually used one spell on the whole mountain? What does he want to do? Why put a spell on this mountain?"

"If it's only this mountain then its good....."

Chu Kong paused. We tried to figure this out. Suddenly on the stones on the roadside flashed a bright red light. On the stones were

flashes that I don't understand. Chu Kong's eyes turned serious: "It's a bloodthirsty spell. It'll suck all the blood of the living creatures inside the spell!"

Immediately, I pulled Chu Kong's sleeve and hid behind him.

"Living creatures, including us?"

"What do you think?"

I carefully thought for a moment: "I really don't know if it includes us."

Chu Kong went silent.

I stick tightly against his back. Chu Kong waved. A crimson whip appeared in his hand. He looked back at me: "Are you not capable or are you just a good for nothing thing? You already restored your immortal body and you're still afraid of this kind of spell? Just find the opening of the spell and break it. It's as simple as that."

Hearing Chu Kong's words, I was startled. If I've fallen into this spell alone, I wouldn't necessarily behave like this. But seeing Chu Kong's straight back standing there, I will not care and hide behind him. This seemed to have become a behavior I couldn't stop.

Of course, I won't tell Chu Kong such a thing.

"Do you think I want to hide behind you? If you hadn't broken my round fan that time, letting me have nothing to protect my body, will I still stand behind you?"

Chu Kong was silent for a while and then hmpfed coldly: "It's just a broken fan. You, a poor ghost actually remembered it for so long. When we go back, I'll pay you back."

My eyes lit up. I grabbed Chu Kong's hand: "This is something you said, ah! We agreed! I want the Weaver Girl's fan. The best one."

Chu Kong pouted dissatisfied: "Really no knowledge."

"If you have the knowledge, you go find a better one, ah. I'll never refuse....."

My words hardly left when Chu Kong grabbed my shoulder, pulled me to a side and jumped into the sky.

I didn't get the situation yet, when a strange sound came from below. I looked and there are several tentacles saw that at the place where we just stood. Flurry and moving. It felt like all the things they seize will be torn into pieces.

I asked: "What are these?"

"The spell has started."

Chu Kong turned serious.

"Look for the spell's opening."

I looked and saw that at the peak of the mountain a flash passed. I poked Chu Kong's hand: "There, there, Chu Kong. Above!"

"You wait here."

Chu Kong didn't say anything more and let go of my hand. He swiftly went to the spell's opening. I stand there and waved at his back: "Do your best, ah!"

Until he was at the peak of the mountain, I came to realize I just naturally wished him the best and he didn't feel anything wrong with it.

The earth shook. A dull sound can be heard. It's the movement of the spell's opening. I looked up at Chu Kong at the peak of the mountain. We are separated too far away. I can't see his expression, but I can imagine how beautiful the light in his eyes will be.

Chu Kong does have some skills and his skills are out of my range. He clearly doesn't seem like someone who'll work under another immortal. Now that I think carefully about it; whether it was Yanwang or great golden star Taibai, they all call him "celestial star Chu Kong". And this title "celestial star" is above his position.

Chu Kong is not as simple as he looks.....

The earth shook again. It didn't come from the direction of the spell's opening. Not far from me, an animal suddenly drilled out from the snow. His whole body is white. His body is covered in white fur. Even the fur on his forehead is white and covered his eyes.

"Who broke my bloodthirsty spell?!"

His roar has a deep voice. I raised an eyebrow. Using one spell on a whole mountain. Beside it's from a demon. This matter is really not simple.

I glanced in the direction where Chu Kong is. This is a critical time to break the spell. It can't be interrupted. The demon on the ground shook his head. He rushed to the peak. My body moved and fell in front of the demon. My hands twisted and a big net appeared. I waved my hand and it fell straight on the head of the demon.

"Although, I'm not powerful, but you can't not look at me, ah."

I walked to the demon covered in net and whispered: "Man is at work, how can I let him have worries?"

Originally, I was such a gentle and considerate person, ah!

The demon's throat made a "gululu" sound.

The earth shook again. The sky above seemed to be breaking apart. The demon lying on the ground suddenly began to struggle as if he needs to fight even if he dies.

A hole formed on the net, while he is struggling. One hole, two holes.

I didn't expect that this demon will have such abilities. My heart is startled. I searched on my whole body to see if I can find something to protect myself. But I realized I have nothing.....

I'm a poor immortal. There's nothing on my body.

"You stay away from her!"

Chu Kong's voice can be heard above our heads.

My body stiffened. A red light flashed at the corner of my eyes. The demon's eyes are covered in a glowing red light.



Soon I heard a terrible roar. The net is completely shattered on his body. He turned to me.

I was soaked in sweat: "In fact, it's alright if you don't look at me. It doesn't matter."

He shouted: "Breaking the spell. Need to die!"

His claws came in my direction. I rolled on the floor and escaped this attack. I haven't come back yet; the second claw came at me. The speed is fast, making me unable to react in time.

The sound of the spell breaking is faster. Presumable Chu Kong accelerated his speed to destroy the spell.

I came to a decision. I need to delay time till Chu Kong get over here.

The demon seemed like he got mad. His claws came at me. I was furious: "The one who destroyed the spell is obviously there. Why are you hitting me?!"

My words hardly left, he got free from the net. The demon's claw came at my head.....

In a split, a hand grabbed my waist. I was surprised. When I came by, the demon is miles away from me. I looked up and saw that Chu Kong is still fighting to break the spell. I turned and looked. I saw a purple robe drift in the wind.

"A Xiang lady?"

His voice has a hint of surprise.

I looked at this person's face for a long time and finally said: "Ah, you are that sinister stone demon, Zihui?"

"Having not seen for so many years, a Xiang lady is still so straightforward."

He smiled with curved corners.

"But it's really an honor that lady still remembers me."

I looked at him for a moment and then looked at Chu Kong for a moment. Suddenly there's an impulse of mischief to roar at Chu Kong: "Your rival has come!"

I really want to know what his expression will be when he heard that.....

# Chapter 37

---

## Part 1

---

A roar sounded in the air. I looked up and saw gold lights falling down like snowflakes. The bloodthirsty spell has been broken.

Chu Kong's robe floated in the air. His figure stood on the top of the snow mountain. The wind blew his robe and long hair. I couldn't see his facial features, but even just a silhouette hit my heart. I couldn't help my heart from thumping really hard.

That thing.....why is he putting such a beautiful pose...

Suddenly Chu Kong moved and turned in my direction.

Zihui who was beside me, smiled, waved at him and shouted: "Shifu, long time no see."

I couldn't see Chu Kong's expression, but suddenly I felt the ground under me trembled. Zihui quietly put away the hand that was still on my waist and said smilingly: "Oops, I didn't know that shifu is a god in this lifetime. I really can't mess with him."

I narrowed my eyes and looked at him. So everyone is an animal who bully the weak but is afraid of the strong.

"Destroying the spell, needs to die!"

The demon hasn't left yet. He stood there and shouted at the sky.

I pointed at the long haired demon and asked Zihui: "What does that mean? The spell has already been broken. Does he think that if he shouted we'll be so afraid that our gal will broke down and die?"

Zihui smiled with squinted eyes: "A Xiang lady is still as funny and lovely."

"So noisy!"

Chu Kong's shout came from far away. His body moved and the next time it appeared again was above the head of the long haired demon.

The long haired demon immediately jumped to get to Chu Kong.

Chu Kong only stood in that place. He didn't hide or avoid. In his hand appeared an immortal seal and he put it above the long haired demon. The long haired demon stiffened and immediately stopped.

Zihui nodded in approval: "En, shifu really has some tactic skills."

I was excited and ran to Chu Kong.

"Well done, Chu Kong! Let's just kill and eat him! I'll dismember him. You go make fire to barbecue him!"

"A Xiang.....lady....."

Zihui's voice has been left far behind by me. I ran to the long haired demon and touched his smooth fur.

"This fur will be able to get a high price. I'll ponder about where to knife him, but it can't be here."

The light in my eyes was really brilliant. Chu Kong suddenly came over and grabbed my hand away from the fur.

"I caught him. You're not allowed to eat."

"Why?!"

I was very angry. Chu Kong glanced at me once and then he looked at Zihui who just arrived. He said with dislike: "Don't you have someone who helps you? You can let him catch one for you. This is what I've caught. I won't let you eat."

Zihui coughed twice. It seemed that he is embarrassed to have been caught in this quarrel.

Chu Kong glared at Zihui. At this point I couldn't be bothered with him and only glared at Chu Kong. I expressed dissatisfaction about such childlike behavior.

“Between us is there still “you” and “me”? I scalped his fur and the money that I get for it will be spend by us. I cut of his meat and roast it; won’t it be eaten by us? You suddenly being like this, is it fun?!”

Chu Kong thought for a while and then he half turned to look at me: “Us?”

I was dazed and surprised: “Otherwise with whom?”

Hearing that answer, Chu Kong finally turned and looked at me. His mouth turned upside. Then he pressed it down and said with a straight face: “Heng, alright, I’ll reluctantly let you cut it. Xiaoye wants the meat of the spine. You must not cut that part badly.”

This guy.....

I don’t even bother to scold someone who will get angry every three days. I turned my attention to the long haired demon and circled around his body. I felt that I should cut him from his belly. I said to Chu Kong: “You turn him over.”

Chu Kong was preparing to do it, when Zihui suddenly said: “I think.....”

“There’s no part for you,” Chu Kong interrupted him and looked at him coldly. “Xiaoye is generous. I won’t bother with the past debt. Now you must go far and hide far away. Don’t let xiaoye see you again.”

Zihui sighed: “What I want to say is that this is a demon. You eating it, isn’t it a bit.....”

I looked strangely at Zihui: “Otherwise, what do we do with it?”

Chu Kong also looked at Zihui strangely: “Otherwise, what do we do with it? This is a demon, not an animal. He guards this bloodthirsty spell; don’t know how many people’s lives he has harmed. Eating it won’t be a loss.”

Chu Kong said it like it was the right thing to do. It seemed that staying long with me, his level has improved!

Chu Kong pulled up his sleeves. With a little strength, he turned the long haired demon over, letting the legs facing the sky. I jumped on the long haired demon's belly. I stick my hand out and said: "Knife."

Chu Kong stretched his hand out at Zihui and said: "Knife."

Zihui sighed: "I mean eating something you don't know isn't a good habit."

While saying that he took out a dagger from his sleeve. He wanted to hand it to Chu Kong, but retracted his hand. He said: "Using my dagger, will have some points of safety....."

Chu Kong's expression turned cold. I hurriedly went in front of Zihui: "En,en, good. Later, I'll cut the front legs for you."

Zihui willingly handed the dagger over.

The first cut will be in the middle of the demon's collarbone. I raised my hand and was about to stab when the demon said with difficulty: "Broke.....the bloodthirsty spell, the lord.....will not.....let you off."

I turned and exchanged a look with Chu Kong. I poked his neck with the tip of the dagger: "Come, say honestly. Who is your lord? Where does he live?"

The demon no longer said anything. I exchanged a look again with Chu Kong. Chu Kong touched his chin and said: "He is like this. Someone must've put him under spell. We won't get anything from him. Just kill and eat it."

"Wait," Zihui shouted. "You.....really want to eat it? I thought you were just simply threatening it....."

I glanced at Zihui once: "Do I seem like I'm pretending?"

I blinked. The dagger went down with a "shua" sound. Blood spattered.

With a spell a flame began to spin and cast shadows of three people on the snow. The demon's meat is fresh and plump. I and Chu Kong lay on the snow with round stomach. Only Zihui holding the legs that I promised him, didn't move. Zihui sighed: "You really eat it....."

Chu Kong said dissatisfied: "Do you have any comment?"

He paused and seemed to be getting angrier: "From just now you have staying here. What do you mean by that? Who told you to come? Who let you stay here? Go away!"

A snow hit straight on my forehead. I was stunned and glared at Chu Kong. I saw that he glanced at me coldly and hmpfed: "I think, the you now is no different from that silly Xiang."

I also hmpfed coldly: "The you now is just the same as that lifetime! Proud, arrogant and likes to bully people!"

Chu Kong turned and glared at me. He frowned tightly. I didn't want to be outdone by him and also glared at him. When we were confronting each other, suddenly Zihui said laughingly: "You two being like this.....other people can easily cut under it" (he means that people can come in between them).

Chu Kong didn't say anything, grabbed some snow and throw it at Zihui. Zihui calmly dodged it.

"Most women like mature and calm men. Shifu being like this isn't good. A Xiang lady, isn't it right?"

Facing with this question I went silent for a while. Then I said straightforwardly: "It's true that I used to think like this in the past."

I looked at Chu Kong's angry face, then I turned and looked at the sky: "But now I think that everyone has his own personality. Someone's personality is also not bad."

My cheeks felt warm. I paused and then continued: "And it's quite unique."

## **Part 2**

---

It was silent for a while. Then Zihui laughed: "A Xiang lady really knows how to praise someone."

"Who allowed you to speak?!"

Chu Kong's voice came from his gritted teeth into my ears.

"Heng, you this demon is really mature and calm, letting people likes you. Letting people lost her soul and still thinking about you."

Zihui was stunned and asked: "What does shifu mean with those words?"

Chu Kong sneered: "I don't have a player disciple."

While Chu Kong was saying those words, I remembered the soul from the cave. I said: "Almost have forgotten this thing. Zihui, do you have a deceased wife? Her soul asked us to come look for you to let you go look for her. Go quickly now, if you're late, her soul will already be scattered."

Zihui let the already cooked leg cook again on the fire. He said smilingly: "A Xiang lady has got the wrong guy."

I hesitated and looked at Chu Kong. Chu Kong narrowed his eyes and look at Zihui. I said: "That woman asked me to pass some words. A Luo has always been waiting for you. Don't you know her?"

The air was full of the smell of the meat. Zihui didn't move and replied quietly: "Don't know."

I pouted and didn't say anything anymore. Chu Kong stroked his hand. The flame opened the meat. The meat falls on the snow and rolled away.

"This smell is making xiaoye upset."

Zihui smiled: "I'm sorry."

He paused and then continued: "Where are you two planning to go next?"

Chu Kong was immediately alarmed: "What do you want?"

"I have nothing to do now. If you two need help, I'll use all my strength to help you in order to pay back Chu Kong's grace for saving me."

"Don't need."



“Good,” I shouted.

Chu Kong frowned. I wondered: “A person taking the initiative to repay you, why don’t you want it? Having someone to run the errand and do the odd jobs is really good.”

This is what I wished for in the lifetime when I was stupid. That lifetime, I failed to accomplish it. Now I am able to get that wish is also good.

Chu Kong put on a stinky face: “No, xiaoye is happy to have him own me.”

I was silent and haven’t had the time to speak again when Zihui said: “As the saying goes, as long as the hoe plays well, there’s no wall that he can dig down. Is Chu Kong afraid of me?”

Hearing those words, I winked and looked at Chu Kong.

Chu Kong saw the actions of our two. Slowly his ears turned red: “Afraid your uncle!”

He shouted and then turned.

“If you want to follow then follow. Wait and see how xiaoye will handle you! This is what you asked yourself; don’t blame me for not warning you! Heng!”

So I and Chu Kong’s road to go get the stones is now with one more person or better said.....with one more stone.

“Use him to fill the hole.”

Zihui bought a fur coat to me at a small tent. I wore it and felt warm. I looked at Zihui and smiled.

Sitting on the chair inside the inn, Zihui went to get something to eat. Chu Kong suddenly looked coldly at me: “He is just a stone demon, using him to fill the hole will let him pay back for saving him and also solve our matter. One stone killing two birds.”

My mouth twitched: “Speaking like that on other’s people back, don’t you feel despicable and treacherous?”

Chu Kong hmpfed coldly: “I didn’t say it on his back.”

“Why is Chu Kong so disgusted by me?”

Zihui put a bowl of buns in front of me.

“A Xiang lady, eat while it’s hot.”

He laughed and looked at Chu Kong: “I’m so dedicated to show my gratitude, but in exchange I got such words from Chu Kong. It really makes me sad. Moreover, what a Xiang lady told me is that the hole is leaking evil energy. Using pure and clean stones can block the evil energy from leaking. If you use me, a stone demon, I’m afraid the more you use, the more it’ll leak.”

Chu Kong’s hand reached my face that was full of buns and squeezed it, letting the oil from my mouth fall onto his hands. He didn’t let go: “You told him everything, ah!”

“Isn’t he geioing to gelp us.....”

Zihui helped me translate: “She said, isn’t he going to help us?”

Chu Kong interrupted him angrily: “I understand what she said!”

Chu Kong pushed my face away and wiped his hand with disgust.

“You, cheap thing. Someone gives you a little benefit and you’re bought. Thing without a backbone.”

I swallowed the buns in my mouth and looked at him: “You have backbone. Don’t eat my buns. Don’t stay at the inn that Zihui found.”

“Xiaoye just won’t stay!”

Chu Kong kicked the chair and stood up: “Today ye will go stay at the *Red House*<sup>[1]</sup>. You two can stay here!”

I blinked and looked at Chu Kong’s leaving figure and forgot the bun.

“Where did.....did he say he was going to stay?”

“He was talking about the Red House.”

I nodded: “Is he going to look for a flower girl, ah?”

Zihui drunk a mouthful tea: "Is a Xiang lady jealous?"

I buried my face in the bun: "Heng, who has the spare time to be jealous?! Let him get ten girls at the night. Let him contract flower transmitted diseases."

Zihui coughed twice and joked: "Since you two like each other so much, why don't you be a little more honest? These two days we were walking together; Chu Kong was really angry."

"That I like him.....is it really that obvious?"

"Really obvious."

I was silent and didn't know what more to say. That's right, ah. I've already been so obvious.....

Chu Kong, you stupid thing, confess to me, let me stay at ease with you and see what's like!

I angrily stuffed another bun in my mouth. Zihui said: "Just tell him directly. With Chu Kong's temper it'll be a difficult task to get him to his mouth."

"It isn't that I haven't given him any hints! He never says it clearly with me must be because in heaven there's still a little small white flower waiting for him! They'll also go look at the stars....."

Those words that I blurted out, made myself startled.

So.....deep in my heart, I have been so skeptical about Chu Kong. Giving him hints again and again, being thick-skinned and told him that he likes me. But every time we get to that point, my heart wants him to get courage to let him tell me directly, giving me a definite answer. But every time.....he didn't give me a direct answer. His performance, his behavior isn't as good and real as one solid sentence "that's right, I like you."

The small white flower who is called Ying Shi that I saw in the netherworld, is always a shadow in my heart, reminding me that Chu Kong can be so gentle to another woman. Alone I looked forward to him.

I used my chopsticks to pick in the bun. After a long time I picked some meat out: "Nobody has ever asked me to go watch the stars."

"If that's so, then a Xiang lady let's go watch the stars today with me."

I looked up at him. Zihui smiled: "We go to the Red House to watch stars."

My eyebrow raised. I was alerted at Zihui: "What do you want to do?"

Zihui smiled mysteriously: "Let celestial star Chu Kong says what's in his heart. Doesn't a Xiang lady want to hear?"

"Don't want....."

The meat in the buns has been poked out by me.

".....will be a lie."

---

## Notes

1. *Red house is a place where courtesans and prostitutes work aka a brothel*

# Chapter 38

---

## Part 1

---

Zihui really brought me to the flower house. But.....I looked at the five store wooden house. On the balcony there were glamorous flowers filling the platform. I pointed at it and asked Zihui: "Is this the flower house which you talked about? Isn't this where the people in town go for sacrifice?"

Zihui smiled: "This is also known locally as a flower house. A Xiang lady doesn't want to go inside and take a look?"

"I want to hear Chu Kong's words from his heart."

"Why hurry, a Xiang lady? When Chu Kong go back to the inn and don't see us, he'll come looking for us. I asked the waiter to tell Chu Kong that we are here watching the stars."

Zihui raised the jar of wine: "Before he gets here, let's drink a few cups of wine, alright?"

I wondered: "How do you know that he'll go back to the inn?"

Zihui winked at me and smiled playfully: "If I didn't know that, wouldn't it be a waste for Chu Kong to give me his heart?"

I was silent for a moment, and then my gaze fell on Zihui's chest. I stared at it for a while. I took the jar of wine and said: "Everyone wants to live. I can understand what you were feeling at that time. Although pursuing something that happened in the past has no meaning; Chu Kong don't say it and I also don't bother to say it, but Zihui, you have to remember that this heart is stolen from Chu Kong. You set a trap for us when I was stupid. I won't allow that to happen a second time."

"Ah."

Zihui was silent for a long time and then smiled: "You and Chu Kong

are really a perfect match made from heaven. You know that what you just said, Chu Kong also has said it. Only this time, I really just want to repay without a second meaning.”

I hesitated. Zihui turned and jumped on the high balcony. I looked at the jar of wine in my hand and also jumped to the balcony.

“Let’s sit for a moment,” Zihui patted place beside him. I sat down and let my feet dangle outside. I unplugged the jar of wine and inhaled the scent of the wine. My spirit immediately lifted up.

“Good wine, where did you buy it?”

“This isn’t bought.”

Zihui looked up at the stars.

“Many years ago I’ve been to this small town. This wine is made personally by me. I wanted to take it out and drink it on the day I marry.”

My mouth just touched the opening of the jar. After I heard that, my throat suddenly felt like its choking. I bore with the pain and put down the jar of wine. I looked at Zihui and saw him laughing. He said: “Drink, I can’t get married anymore.”

I thought back to the female soul and asked: “Do you really not have a deceased wife? You don’t know a Luo?”

Zihui continued to smile: “In this life, I only loved one person, but that person even if I’ve given her my heart, I didn’t get that person. The day before we got married, she took my original heart and ran away.”

He narrowed his eyes and looked at the distant stars. He said seriously: “I didn’t marry, don’t have a wife and also don’t know a Luo.”

But that woman called a Luo knows Zihui.

Looking at his face, those words couldn’t come out of my mouth.

The sweet wine drifted into my nose. It’s a fresh and sweet taste; as if it traveled through time and space to tell me the longing of the

person who made the wine.

I handed back the jar of wine to Zihui: "The first gulp of this wine that has been hidden for so many years must be from you. The flavor now must be different from the flavor then."

Zihui hung his head. He laughed with a bitter meaning: "Don't need to taste it, I already know."

"Hehe, in the middle of the night, a man and a woman alone in front the flowers and under the moon, talking and singing together and also having the same thoughts. Very good, very good."

From behind came a strange laugh. I turned and saw Chu Kong standing there. The crimson whip in his hand seemed violent.

Zihui turned and looked at Chu Kong once. Then he turned again, looked at me and said: "The wine has a surprise."

After saying that, he grabbed my hand, he raised his hand and the jar shoved into my mouth. The sweet wine instantly went into my mouth.....

A piercing pumping sound can be heard. Zihui barely escaped Chu Kong's whip. He smiled with squinted eyes: "Stars, you two go see it. I want to go back and sleep."

After saying that, he waved and disappeared in the night.

Because of the wine, I'm choking. I clutched my chest and coughed. After a moment I felt a warmth slid down from my throat to my stomach. Then it came back up and stunned my head.....Wait, wait, what did Zihui say? The wine has a surprise? He prepared this wine for the day he marries. In that kind of scenery, what kind of wine should be drunk? Even with only my hairs, I know what kind of wine!

But this is used by the local people of this small town, ah! He also wants I and Chu Kong to be wild wild wild.....wild.....together?!

Chu Kong didn't know what I've drunken. He's still blaming me: "You really forget fast. That lifetime, you fell into his trap, now you want to fell into his trap again, isn't it? A little gift and a small favor can buy

you. Very good, really well done!”

Sweats slowly began to form on my forehead. This situation is really bad, ah.....

Seeing that I didn't speak for half a day, Chu Kong squatted down beside me: “You really.....What's the matter with you?”

His face was serious. His hand touched my forehead. In his eye, there's a hidden anger.

“What tricks did that guy play again?!”

“There's a drug in the wine.”

At first, I wanted to deceive Chu Kong and then run. But this mouth seemed like it lost control and those words blurted out. Even covering can't be done.

Chu Kong picked the jar of wine. He asked himself: “What kind of drug?”

“Spring.....”

I stretched my hand and covered my mouth tightly, but my mouth doesn't let it be controlled. The two words that I thought in my heart came out of my teeth and went into Chu Kong's ears: “Spring.....drug.....”

Chu Kong was startled. His body suddenly turned soft and he sat beside me. He looked coldly at me in silence. I covered my mouth and swallowed. I nervously waited for his response. I never thought that after he was silent for half a day, he'll ask me: “Then.....then what do we do?”

## **Part 2**

---

Aside from you helping me, what else is there to do?! I was roaring in my heart, but didn't expect that those words would slip out of my mouth again: “Of course, you need to help me!”

The air was silent. I and Chu Kong's warm breath formed white mist



in the cold air. We stared at each other for a while and finally I looked away. I slapped my mouth a few times.

Shouldn't have say it, ah! Why can't I control it?!

Can it be.....my eyes fell on the jar of wine in Chu Kong's hand.

Chu Kong suddenly trembled. He put the jar on the wooden table. The wine spilled out. With "gululu" sound it rolled down the five store house.

I looked up at Chu Kong and saw that he walked a few steps back with a sun-like transparent red face.

"Help, help?"

I didn't know what kind of images he formed in his mind. His voice was really hoarse.

His shy appearance, made my ears feel hot. I touched my face to calm myself down.

"Don't first think so deep. Maybe this wine has something else."

I don't know if Chu Kong has heard those words. I only saw him stood up quickly with his back to me. I heard him took a few deep breaths and then he said really quickly: "Let's go back first. If there's really no other way.....you go roll in the snow."

Hearing his words, I felt that the focus isn't on what Zihui put in the wine anymore. I looked at his back for a while, then the words in my heart blurted out again: "I say Chu Kong, Do you really like me?"

Chu Kong's back stiffened. He was silent for a long time before he said: "Otherwise.....you go roll a few more laps in the snow. I'll guard you. I won't let others look at you....."

I saw my own clenched fists clench and release several times. A bunch of silent fires flared in my heart. I tried to hold and hold it back. After hearing those words from Chu Kong, they broke out. I stood up and walked to the front of Chu Kong.

Chu Kong looked up at the stars and didn't look at me. I reached out

and grabbed his collar.

“Chu Kong, let’s lie down and talk, alright?”

Chu Kong looked stunned for a moment. My hand put more force and my foot tripped his foot. Of course, Chu Kong didn’t guard against me and stumbled straight onto the wooden platform with a “zhi ya” sound. Obediently he lay on the platform. I sat on his belly, tugging at his collar and condescending stared at him.

“No!”

Chu Kong’s face was so red that blood is almost coming out. His stared in the distance and said sternly: “Even if the drug is really strong, you need to hold it.”

While he is saying that, he struggled to get up. I grabbed his forehead with one hand and pressed him down, letting his head be glued on the wooden platform. This time, I may have caused him pain. He frowned. His right hand grabbed the hand that was holding his collar. My heart hurt. I blurted out: “I like you.”

This sentence made Chu Kong go in shock. He stared at me with big eyes.

The dark sky is filled with stars as if to not let me find my own shadow.

I also didn’t speak and didn’t know what to say next, but the troubled thoughts in my heart leaked out: “Although you are violent and don’t understand how to be gentle. Occasionally, you will also want to beat me. You look a little childish. Your temper is not calm and your mind isn’t so good. Also you totally don’t understand a woman’s mind. When you’re angry you don’t know how to give in. Your moods are really hard to grasp.....”

Chu Kong’s eyes that were originally stunned, changed with my words.

“But.”

I want to shut my mouth, but those words seemed to have opened a

certain door in my brain that can't be closed. So.....I just spoke honestly.

I think Chu Kong is proud guy. He can't say it, then I'll say it. He doesn't dare to be straightforward, so I can only be brave.....then, forcing him to open his mouth, forcing him to say it.

"But! I still want you! We've already kissed, already hugged and at one point we even touched each other's body! Today, you want to obey, you have to obey. You don't want to obey, you still have to obey!"

I grabbed his collar and fiercely pulled at it.

"Say it! Say you like me! Hurry and honestly admit it!"

After saying all the storms in my heart, I looked at the dazed Chu Kong. Suddenly helplessly thought: obviously I came to hear his words from his heart, but he hasn't even spit one word out and I've already said so much myself, really.....putting the cart before the horse.

"You, get up."

I didn't know how long we were silent; suddenly Chu Kong said those words.

I didn't loosen: "You admit first!"

"I say for you to get up first," Chu Kong shouted angrily.

I am also angry: "You admit it, I'll naturally get up!"

"Really a thing that doesn't know when she'll die or live!"

His words hardly left, I suddenly felt my body being dumped. After spinning, my back was against the cool wooden platform. My eyes were full of Chu Kong's face and the stars in the sky. I saw his hot red ear. I felt his hot breath on my face and heard him say through gritted teeth: "Xiao Xiang Zi, remember this well. You forced me!"

My lips felt warm. A wet slippery stuff got into my mouth. In this moment, this kiss with a unique strength of a man, almost completely

drained the breath out of my life.

This thing.....actually dared to say, I forced him? In all this hot and crazy thoughts, one thought made me a little calmer.

Those ten copper coins, I really bet them wrong!

# Chapter 39

---

## Part 1

---

This hot wet kiss gradually deepened. My heart felt resolute. I thought that I have already said the words and got to this point. If I don't do it more thoroughly, I'll feel sorry for this old face of mine!

I raised my hand and put it around Chu Kong's neck, tightly confining him and began to fiercely respond to this emotional kiss.

It's because I felt like I trapped into the fire or it's because I spoke all the things that was deep in my heart out, but I couldn't stop this passionate kiss.

I couldn't detect Chu Kong's thoughts and feelings. I only felt his hand moving up and down on my back. It felt a little sentimental. I didn't know where I should return the fondle, but I'm itching all over my body.

We have no experience in this, but when I was in Yue Lao temple, occasionally I can look in the mirror of fate to see the wedding scene of a married couple.

I know. The first step is undressing.

I loosened my hand from Chu Kong's neck and probed into his waist. I pulled for a long time before I used brute force and broke his belt into two.

Chu Kong didn't notice what I did to him. His hands are still on my back. I moved my lips and bit his ear: "You need to.....make some real progress, ah....."

My words hardly left, when I felt my aorta being sucked by someone. After a slight tingling feeling, a numb feeling entered my head. I haven't had the time to groan when I saw someone entering the territory. All of sudden a "bang!" sound resounded in the sky.

It felt like a pot of cold water being poured down. The night watchman's voice came from far: ".....be careful of the fire."

An extremely dull tone passed through my ears. Chu Kong was lying on top of me and didn't move. I held my breath; afraid that if I breathed loudly the night watchman will hear it when he is passing.

Bang, bang.

"Be careful of the fire."

A tsunami passed through my mind. We actually almost did it here.....under the eyes of everyone!

The me who has returned was frowning all over my face.

The night watchman just passed down the flower house. Chu Kong silently pulled me into his embrace. I tugged at his shoulder and tore his clothes. But he kept his head down on my forehead, not letting me see his expression. Until when the night watchman is far away that even his voice can't be heard anymore, did he let go of me. He sat up and quietly put a little distance between us.

I tidied my clothes. I pretended to be calm, sat up and said: "Well ah, let's go back."

Chu Kong nodded and with a "shua" sound, he stood up. But he didn't know and I also have forgotten; his belt has just been ripped. So when he got up, his pants fell straight down.

Chu Kong: "....."

I: "....."

He immediately bent down and pulled up his pants. I turned to not look at him.

"I didn't see anything."

## **Part 2**

---

The wind whistled against my ear. I could hear the air's strange

silence. When I turned again, that side didn't even have a shadow.

Chu Kong, he actually.....fled.....

When I returned to the inn, Zihui was sitting in the empty hall, all dressed. Seeing that I was back, he smiled with squinted eyes: "Just now, Chu Kong, while holding his clothes, hurriedly went back into his room. Then a Xiang lady came back refreshed. How come this scene is reversed from what I expected?"

Chu Kong saw Zihui and actually didn't beat him?! It seemed that his heart must be really in chaos. Being and immortal without desires, he almost did it with me outside.....

He has a proud temper and he also lost his pants in front of me. The activity in Chu Kong's heart must be as exciting as it can be.

I approached and grabbed Zihui's collar. I coldly asked: "You actually dare to stay here waiting for us?! Say, what for thing is that wine?!"

Zihui laughed leisurely: "That wine is called speaking the truth. When people drink it, it'll make them speak the truth."

I said full of hate: "Then what do you mean by letting me drink it when you went away?!"

"No, actually I wanted to let you two drink it together. But no matter whom of you have drunken it, it shouldn't be like this, ah. A Xiang lady and Chu Kong are really different from ordinary people."

I scratched my head in distress. I let go of Zihui and warned him: "Don't need you to be the the good person. We'll solve our matter ourselves!"

I turned and went upstairs. With mixed feelings, I stood in front of Chu Kong's door for a while. I felt that we need to calm down by ourselves.

I lay on the bed for half a night and couldn't sleep. It felt like there's always a Chu Kong lying next to me, close to my neck and sucking at the place where my aorta is.

At dawn, the door made squeak sounds. The me who was sleeping

lightly immediately woke up. When I saw the guy standing at the edge of my bed, I foolishly didn't move.

The blush on his face seemed to be as if an iron has branded it. It burned nonstop.

"Alright, I know! Alright! Just let it be like this!"

He came and said those strange words. I blinked and looked at him. He took a deep breath and turned his head: "Give.....give you a chance to like me."

The morning light came through the window and stayed on Chu Kong's body. His hair was loosened and was till his feet. I looked and was in trance. His eyes looked everywhere but me.

"Alright, today I went overboard. Xiaoye.....xiaoye will take responsibility!"

Chu Kong's eyes glanced once at my neck. Then he closed his eyes. He almost shouted: "When we go back to heaven, I'll marry you, alright?!"

I was in shock. It took a while before I reacted. I asked in disbelief: "Are you, you proposing, marriage?"

Chu Kong looked at me with his nostrils: "It's giving you a chance to marry me."

I was silent for a while and then stretched my hand out: "Where's the dowry? Without a dowry, I won't marry."

I and Chu Kong getting together, I'll lose ten copper coins. Didn't need to say about other things, Chu Kong needs to pay me these ten copper coins back.

My business like attitude makes Chu Kong's face, which has always been red, cool down. He stared at me for a while and then scratched his head irritably: "Back to heaven, I'll give it to you! I'll give you as much as you want! Really a thing that only knows how to gain more benefit!"

"Wait a moment!"



I sat up and asked solemnly: “You still have to tell me who Ying Shi is.”

“Ying Shi? Why ask about her?”

“Of course I need to ask. My man, from the inside to the outside can only be mine. All the women around him, he needs to report them clearly!”

The two words “my man” let Chu Kong’s face become red. He honestly answered: “My little *shimei*<sup>[1]</sup>.”

I said with disdain: “Who do you want to deceive?! Don’t think I don’t know. At the Morning God’s estate, the twelve celestial stars are scattered immortals that he had found outside. I never heard you twelve becoming a disciple of a shifu. Where did you get a shimei?”

Chu Kong scowled: “In my childhood, I was a disciple of an immortal. But because such a long time has passed and at the time I was still small, the memories are a little blurred. Then that master of mine disappeared. All the disciples scattered in the four directions. I and Ying Shi were too small. We wandered in heaven for a while and then have been recruited by the Morning God.”

Listening to him explaining like this, I finally nodded: “Then let’s go back to heaven and get married. In the future, you maintain me.”

Chu Kong turned away and headed out.

“First find the fluorite and close the hole leaking the evil energy. Then we’ll talk.”

He went out of my room. The sun rose. The room was bright. I sat on the couch, holding my knees and silently blushed.

Marry someone, ah. Marry Chu Kong.....such a proud guy proposed to me. From now on, we can be together. Want to kiss, and we can kiss. Want to hug and we can hug. I and he can be referred to as.....us.

When it’s time to leave the inn, I finally discovered that Zihui disappeared. The waiter of the inn said that Zihui left us a letter and

a fan. Chu Kong grabbed Zihui's letter. After he read it, he made a ball of it. Then he handed the fan to me and snappily said: "He said to let you stay obediently by my side. This fan is as an apology to us."

Chu Kong hmpfed coldly.

"Such a broke fan, he still dared to give it as a gift. However, we can use it as a replacement. Use it as a self-defense instrument. In the future, I'll give you a better one."

I took the fan from him and lightly let my gaze swept over Chu Kong.

"You don't need to eat vinegar. I don't like him."

"Heng, who has the time to eat vinegar. Women are really hypocritical."

Who is more hypocritical, ah.....

Maybe it's because we're hurrying to go back to heaven to marry. And maybe it's because, we see more and more demons being awakened by the evil energy. I and Chu Kong accelerated the speed of our feet. After many days, we finally arrived at Kun Wu Mountain. The fluorite is where the air is stronger. And guarding the fluorite is some beast.

Chu Kong estimated my and his powers and temporarily drew out a plan. It's as follow: Chu Kong will go and fight the beast to distract him. I'll go in and stole the fluorites. After I get the fluorites outside, I'll send him a signal. We'll leave the territory.

Chu Kong warned me again and again: "The beast is covered in flames and burning in rages. Your body is a cloud. Beware to grill in it. So when you see fire, quickly hide. Don't be brave. Stones can be taken again, but there's only one life."

He doesn't need to remind me with those words. I repeatedly nodded to express I know.

Chu Kong scheduled the time that we'll steal the fluorite at night. In the night, the beast is covered with flames, we can see him clearly.

But he can't see us. Enemy in the dark, I in the light (*she means that the enemy doesn't know anything while they know everything*), is a good opportunity to attack.

---

### Notes

1. 师妹 (*Shīmèi*): *female junior*.

## Chapter 40

---

Looking at the red flamed beast, I poked Chu Kong's arm and whispered: "You mean, you want to go fight this big fire ball?"

"If not, are you going to?"

Chu Kong glanced at me once.

"Now you know how much risk xiaoye needs to take. So later remember to use all your wisdom of this lifetime to quickly steal the stones....."

"I know, I know! Can that mouth of yours not always be so dissatisfied with me," I interrupted him. "I'm also not stupid. If you die, I'll become a widow."

Chu Kong blushed. He still wanted to say something, but the flamed beast below us has awakened by our movements. He looked up and his throat made threatening sounds. This flamed beast really made the demon that we saw a few days ago seem like a kitten.

Chu Kong turned serious. He walked and stood in front of me. A fierce murderous energy made the flamed beast immediately quiet down.

The moon and stars are at the back. I followed the moon and the stars to hide in the shadows. I rushed to find a convenient place to go down the mountain and to hide myself really well.

The flamed beast is a sensitive animal. When he looked up, flames got out of his deep throat. His roar teared the sky. I covered my ears and felt that my heart is stuffed.

In a split of a moment, the flamed beast went into the sky. I saw a mass of flames rushing straight to Chu Kong.

I silently say take care in my heart. While the flamed beast is attacking Chu Kong, I sneaked into the cave. The stones in the cave are in disorder. I look left and right, but didn't see the pure, white

clean stone.

The sound of the battle above came into my ears. The flames looked like fireworks during a feast. I couldn't see Chu Kong's figure clearly. I gritted my teeth and walked deeper into the cave. I need to hurry. The flamed beast is an immortal beast. If he gets killed by it, maybe he wouldn't even have the opportunity to go to the netherworld. I really can't be a widow.

I was still deep in thoughts, when I suddenly looked up. I saw that not far away another thing flashing a white light. My heart felt happy. I hurriedly went to it. One glance at it; it wasn't the white stone that I've been searching, but two long hairs. Its two little flamed beast that hasn't formed fire yet.

Two little guys looked at me with watery eyes, while they blinked. My heart flicked. I hesitated for a moment. I haven't had the time to put my hands on them when suddenly the mouth that hasn't even formed teeth called out. It sounded as if I'm dismembering them.

The sound of the battle suddenly stopped.

Cold sweat slid down on my forehead. I stiffly turned around. The big fireball in the sky is glaring at me. His feet moved and in a blink of eye, he is rushing towards me. Chu Kong whipped fiercely and bound the flamed beast's foot.

I hardened my heart and took out the fan that Zihui gifted. I read the spell and violently waved with the fan. A big wind came. Those two guys have been rolled away like two little balls. Sharp screams can be heard.

I walked to the back of the cave and saw a ground full of white stones. I didn't need to touch them to feel the clean energy. This is certainly the fluorites. I pulled out the bag that I prepared and neatly picked the stones.

I was thinking that today we can return triumphantly when I felt something hot around the corner. I turned and looked.

"Dad, that person is here."

I haven't been able to think about that in such a long while. There are children, there's a mother then certainly there will be a father! Chu Kong led the mother away; how will the father endure this loneliness.....

So from the north of the cave, another more rapid huge flamed beast rushed towards me.

I closed the bag, read a spell and ran. But the burning feeling from behind is getting closer and closer.

Chu Kong's shout seemed like it came from the other end of the horizon: "Throw the stones! Withdraw!"

My brain didn't have time to understand his words when an intense heat swallowed me. I subconsciously pulled out the immortal cover to cover myself. But the father seemed really dissatisfied because I hit his children just now. A roar sounded in the sky. The three hundred year old immortal cover broke like ceramics. From behind came a hot tearing pain. The moment before I fainted, what my mind thought of is.....

Chu Kong, you're about to become a widower.

The world turned black like when I was just a cloud. No soul, no feelings. Time, getting old, the circle of life and death; in my eyes they have no significance. Later, Yue Lao converted me. This move must've been done after he was drunk. I became a fairy with little qualified achievements. I have no spiritual power and no system of learning. If I seriously think about the three hundred years that I watched the door for Yue Lao in heaven, every day felt the same.

When did it begin to change.....

It seemed that when the red clothed young man barged in, I no longer live a day the same as yesterday. He let me know that life can be so wonderful.

The flame whirring sound never stopped. I opened my eyes with much effort and looked at the scene before me. I foolishly froze.

Doesn't matter if it's a person or an immortal; in the space where

time flies, there'll always be some things that even if you glanced at them once, will leave a heavy imprint engraved in the mind.

No matter how many years has passed, whenever that page is turned, the images will come back as new as ever.

At this time, Chu Kong's back carved a timeless heavy imprint on the back of my mind.

In the burning cave, the grunts of the flamed beast can be heard. Chu Kong stood in front of me like a barrier, cutting out a safe region for me. His appearance didn't look an ounce cool or chic. His hair is scattered. His whole body is soaked in blood. His left hand is hanging weakly, like it has been broken.

I didn't know for how long I fainted. I can't imagine the scene of Chu Kong fighting with these two flamed beasts. I only know that he has always been in front of me, guarding me like a real hero.

I moved my body. I wanted to get up, but the pain in my back made me lay back while groaning in pain.

Hearing my groan, the flamed beasts became more restless. Their situation isn't that optimistic either. One is lying on the floor like its dying. The other one has many wounds on its body.

"Can you still read a spell?"

Chu Kong didn't look back. With his back to me in a tired and hoarse voice which still is calm he asked: "How far can you run?"

I silently measured my ability. I shook my head: "Can run, but the flamed beast will be certainly faster than me."

Chu Kong was silent. Timely, the flamed beast shouted. It seemed like he prepared himself for the last combat. He stood up and rushed toward us.

Chu Kong put the crimson whip on his chest. He sang a spell. The whip changed into a sword. The sword was really red like it's soaked in blood.

This is the first time that I knew that his whip can also be used like

this.

Chu Kong held the sword. His whole body emitted an immortal energy. He didn't look back and said: "When you spot an opportunity, run. These two animals won't be able to catch up with you. Hold the stones. Remember to go fill the hole."

What about you.....

I didn't need to ask these words; I can already guess his mind. He made up his mind to fight to death. But with this death, nobody knows if he can reincarnate again.

"I.....don't want to be a widow."

Chu Kong heard my speech. With some surprise, he turned around.

Smoke formed on my body, making the entire cave full of white mist. Even the flames on the flamed beast have been extinguished for a moment.

Chu was furious: "Stupid thing. Not allowed to transform into your real form! Do you really want to be grilled?!"

When he finished saying those words, I've already transformed into my real form. I turned into a mass of clouds and wrapped Chu Kong. I flew to the sky. I didn't fly fast. Besides, I dragged a long string of old clouds.

The flamed beasts below couldn't see their opponent because of the smoke. They were furious. A fireball flew towards me. Because I was without a shell, he couldn't hurt me. But he dried a lot of the mist on my body.

Dawn's light passes through Kun Wu Mountain before it sprinkled on the earth. Sharp cries can be heard from the cave of the little flamed beasts. They are presumably hungry.

The flamed beast roared a few times at me, but he didn't come after me.

I flew with the wind and floated in the sky. It's been a long time since I've such a feeling of freedom.



“Hey! Are you alright?”

Chu Kong’s head drilled out of the clouds, while he loudly asked me.

I couldn’t speak. My body went to below.

In fact.....I’m really not alright.....

The smoke cleared. Once again, I turned into a human. Without the power of an immortal, I can only fall straight down. My back is tearing in pain. My heart felt really unbearable, making me feel a pain like being baked.

Chu Kong pulled me into his arms. The wind blew my hair. Chu Kong patted my face while scolding me: “Now you know it’s unbearable! Say to not change to your real form, but you just don’t listen! Did it feel comfortable being roasted as a cloud fairy?!”

His voice has been broken by the wind. I also shouted hoarsely: “If I didn’t see that you’re nearly dying, why would I do so?! Ungrateful thing!”

“Who is the ungrateful thing?! Do you think I saved you to let you sacrifice yourself?!”

I was paused and then said: “Got it! Is it interesting fighting for this?! Fill the hole. After filling the hole, go back and get married!”

# Chapter 41

---

## Part 1

---

The heavy bag full of fluorites fell on the ground. I and Chu Kong also fall on the ground. The injury on my back made it unable to stand and to sit.

Chu Kong can only use one hand. If he held me, he can't hold the fluorites. We pondered for a while and then decided to rest in this place for a day and then leave.

That night, Chu Kong picked up the firewood and lit them. I endured the pain and bound his arm with three branches. Then I undressed and lay on the ground to let Chu Kong clean the wound with water.

Using the princess' and the general's body in the previous lifetime felt like nothing. This lifetime, it's my own body. It made me a little embarrassed.

I clutched my chest, lay on the ground with my tummy and muttered: "Just massage my back honestly. Don't have any other thoughts."

Chu Kong hmpfed coldly: "Looking at your burned and bloody appearance, do you still think I'll have the appetite to eat you? Be less worried about things that don't exist."

Although Chu Kong's words were really cold, but the hand cleaning my wound is so gentle like it's from another person.

Even though he was really gentle, but the pain of an open flesh being soaked in water is really unable to conceal. I hissed. I felt that Chu Kong didn't dare to put his hand back on my back. I tightly gritted my teeth and didn't make a sound anymore. The wound would just get worse if it didn't get cleaned. We just need to fill the hole now and go back to heaven. Being weak here will just delay time.

The cleaning continued. This time Chu Kong put herbs on my back. I also didn't make a sound. My head is full of sweat from enduring the

pain. Suddenly, I felt Chu Kong touching my head. With a low, sensual voice he said: "I'm sorry....."

I didn't know for what he was apologizing. I answered groggily: "The things that you need to apologize to me are many. Come, let me listen to some more."

I thought that even if Chu Kong didn't beat me this time, he'll make some remark. I didn't think that after waiting for half a day, I'll hear one honest sentence: "I'm sorry."

I looked at him a little surprised: "Chu Kong! You're sick!"

He glanced at me once and then he gaze fell on my back again. I could feel his finger walking on my burned flesh. He said: "Although you always pretend to be a rough man without care for appearance, but a woman is still a woman. Letting you suffer such a pain, in the end, it's my fault....."

I was foolishly stunned for a while. I find it hard to be moved with his mature appearance.

"It's still you who is marrying something ugly."

I lay back and closed my eyes.

"Anyway, I rely on you here."

Besides, Chu Kong has protected me. His back at that time is enough to make me feel at ease. An immortal's body is handier than a human's body. Although such a flesh wound can't be completely healed, but it'll still can reluctantly pass.

I and Chu Kong hurried the next day hurried to Hua Mountain. The hole leaking the evil energy is there. After filling it, will settle I and Chu Kong's seven lifetimes of love fate!

I have a wishful thinking. After being burned by the flamed beast, I hurt my soul. After going back to the heaven I need to spend Chu Kong's money to nourish myself well.

Hua Mountain is the place where I and Chu Kong stayed when we were a tiger and a pig. Going on this ground again will have another

feeling. I was really happy. Chu Kong expression is really bad. I can understand his gloominess. Nobody wants to remember how they looked like as a pig. Until I saw the opening of that cave from that lifetime, was I shocked. It turned out that Chu Kong's expression was so serious because the evil energy leaking from here is already beyond our imagination. In that cave the evil energy is really concentrated. The vegetation next to it already died.

I and Chu Kong went into the cave. We set our first step in the dark and heard a "kacha" sound. I stiffened and looked down. I have stepped onto broken bones.

Chu Kong's expression turned more serious: "After that time, more people must've come to worship. No wonder the evil energy leaked so fast."

He turned and ordered: "Your soul has been damaged. You should not enter. Wait outside for me."

He grabbed the bag filled with fluorites and walked with big steps into the cave. I heard that after every step he made will be a "kacha" sound at the back. I couldn't help and hugged my arm.

I felt that with such a thick and evil energy, there will not be a more powerful monster that can hurt people. There's isn't much that I can help Chu Kong with while he is filling the hole. So I eased my heart and squatted down. At the same time I purified the surrounding air.

But I waited for a long time and still didn't see Chu Kong come out. I looked into the cave with a little unease. I couldn't help and shouted: "Chu Kong, did you still not put the stones?"

The sound echoed back and forth in the cave, but no answer came from Chu Kong.

I waited for a little while and suddenly heard a muffled sound from the cave. My heart jumped. I know that it isn't good. I turned my feet to enter the cave. Suddenly, a golden light flashed in front of my eyes. A surge of cold breath blew in my direction. My whole body flew out and hit straight on a dead trunk. The wound on my back opened. The pain was unbearable. A cold wind wandered into my

heart. I vomited blood.

“Oh, here there’s still a little fairy,” a strange man’s voice said with somewhat leisurely elegance and callous cruelty.

## **Part 2**

---

“Are you waiting for that celestial star to come out?”

The blond man laughed.

“If that’s so, you don’t need to wait anymore.”

I wanted to say something, but this mouth can only vomit blood. I can only watch the blond man smiling wickedly. He licked his lips and said cruelly: “Because he has been eaten by me.”

Chu Kong has been eaten?

That defiant and arrogant guy actually .....has been eaten?

I couldn’t believe my ears.

“But his soul ran away fast. It hasn’t been caught by me.”

My eyes lit up. If his soul is not destroyed, Chu Kong will be able to go down the netherworld. It’ll then just be a reincarnation circle. He is alright.

My heart eased up. Then I heard the man say: “But even if he went to the netherworld, you won’t be able to see him again.”

I clutched my chest. The cold feeling doesn’t go away. A hand suddenly grabbed my neck and lifted me up. I could feel his sharp nails piercing into my neck. Warm blood flow out. I wanted to struggle, but the enemy’s strength is really too great. The evil energy set on me like heavy shackles, imprisoning all my actions. Gradually my ears began to buzz. Only the man’s voice wrapped around my heart: “Because, you’ll never be able to reincarnate again.”

From my neck came a “ka” sound. I felt a pain. So actually I’ll be crushed to death like this.....

“Fuck, on this sunny day I actually met a pervert,” I cursed out loud.

My soul got rid of that injury ridden body. I turned and run to the road to the netherworld. I vaguely saw that someone is waiting for me. But I didn't get to see that person clearly, when a great strength captured me. I turned around in horror and saw that the blond man is smiling at me with squinted eyes. His fingertips hooked gently on my soul. He said to himself: “Let the pervert me see where the cloud fairy is. Oh, above my head, ah.”

I struggled with all my strength, but he is squeezing me like squeezing a worm. His fingertips barely tipped my forehead and I suddenly felt my forehead turn hot. The panic in my heart became stronger. I shouted: “This little fairy's power is really not much. I wasn't sincere while cultivating. My head is full of filthy thoughts. Really not tasty, ah! You let me go, good?!”

“Not good,” the man said while smiling. “Well, a cloud fairy. Really rare, really rare.”

I was transported through dog poop before I was transformed from a cloud to a fairy by Yue Lao! This is also rare!

He didn't wait for me to shout those words. My forehead cooled. He dragged my soul out. He narrowed his eyes and looked at my soul for a while. It felt like studying food.

“Well, this cloud fairy is damaged. Beside she is still an immature thing. You must have been transformed into a fairy by another immortal. Hey.....does your soul still possess my evil energy?”

After he said that, I was shocked. My soul has his evil energy?

Could it be.....the lifetime I was a tiger.....

He didn't wait for me to think about it, the blond hair man shook his head. He let out a helpless sigh.

“The root of immortality is not correct. The soul is damaged. Defective product. Cheche, tasteless, tasteless, really tasteless. It's a real pity.”

Is.....is he dissatisfied with me?

The man played with my soul in his hand. He seemed in deep thought about if he should or shouldn't eat me.

Suddenly a white shadow flashed. My soul disappeared from the man's hand. My soul loosened. I felt the finger that the man used to grab me has been destroyed. I felt something tightly grabbing my arm. Chu Kong's voice sounded in my ear: "Run!"

I didn't say anything and concentrated on running to the road to the netherworld. Behind me came the sounds of blows. After passing through the boundary between the netherworld and the human realm, I turned and looked. Chu Kong with the body of a soul pushed the man about two feet backwards. Then he ran and stood beside me.

Seeing that I was still startled, he kicked my ass.

"Really a thing that can't do anything well, but do everything wrong!"

I rolled into the netherworld instead of walking.

I looked back for the last time. The blond hair man didn't have the meaning to go after us. He is looking thoughtfully at Chu Kong's back and smiled mysteriously.

## **Part 3**

---

My heart made a thump sound. After I rolled into the netherworld, I stood up, pulled Chu Kong and asked: "The pervert just smiled at you! Has.....he set his eyes on you?"

This question didn't get an answer. Instead, Chu Kong grabbed my skirt and asked: "He hit you, do you only know how to stupidly be beaten?! When you fight with me, aren't you really brave? Why didn't you resist? Why didn't you dodge?! Is your brain just full of cow dung?!"

I was scolded by his inexplicable rage.

“Why are you so furious? If I can resist do you think I’ll stupidly be beaten? If I’m able to dodge will I still stand there? Do you think I really want to die?”

In my opinion, even though Chu Kong is arrogant, he isn’t someone that isn’t reasonable. Previously my soul has been hurt by the flamed beast. The strength between me and the light blond hair man is also there. Even he himself has been eaten. He ought to know how strong that person is. Fight back or dodge won’t happen just because I want it. His rage now is really puzzling.

“You don’t want to die! Your soul has already been taken and you still say you don’t want to die?! You!”

He was speechless. He gritted his teeth and watched me with an unknown expression. Then suddenly he raised his hand and put it on my forehead. The burning feeling burned for a while and then disappeared. It was him who took my soul back from that man. He hung his head: “Do you know that your soul has almost been wiped out?”

Seeing his expression the fire burning in my heart also disappeared.

He must be worried about me.....

Waiting patiently on the other side for an opportunity to attack. He is probably angry because he isn’t strong enough. Or maybe he is venting because he is restraining himself from showing that he was scared just now.

This idiot who doesn’t know how to express himself. (*totally agree*)

I stretched my hand and touched his head.

“You’re the idiot whose brain is full of cow dung.”

We rested for a while in the netherworld. Then we tidied our clothes and moods and went to Yanwang’s palace. I asked Chu Kong curiously: “Who is that man? His whole body is covered in evil energy. He’s so powerful. What did you encounter in that cave?”

Chu Kong was silent for a while and then said: “When I was filling



the hole with fluorites, he suddenly flew out from the hole. I and he exchanged some blows.”

He coughed loudly. He seemed to be reluctant to admit that his immortal power is inferior to that man.

“.....Because before I fought with the flamed beast and the wounds hasn't healed yet, so I lost. But I'm unlike you. Xiaoye on the last moment, even facing death and bleeding has closed that hole with fluorites. Evil energy won't leak from there again without two, three thousand years. As for whom that person is.....if I didn't guess wrong, he must be a sinful god locked in the eighteenth floor of hell. He took the opportunity and escaped. This matter should be reported to Yanwang, let him search for people to solve it. Anyway, our task of filling the hole has been completed.”

Hearing him say that, my heart felt happy and I said: “So, we can go back and get married!”

Chu Kong's face turned red, coughed twice and didn't answer. I happily narrowed my eyes.

“From today onwards, I'm also someone that has somebody who'll provide for me. How much money do you earn per month? Can you really provide for me? Don't say that the Morning God is as stingy as Yue Lao?”

I talked all the way to Yanwang's palace. Surprisingly, Yanwang is writing something with a serious expression on the desk with a brush. The magistrate is sitting beside him, marking the files. It's the first time that I saw the Yanwang's palace look like a Yanwang's palace. It made me not know how to react.

I and Chu Kong froze for a moment before we entered the hall. Chu Kong put his fist together in front of him to show Yanwang courtesy: “Yanwang, Hua Mountain's hole has already been closed, but there's still a matter that I need to report to you.”

“I already know,” Yanwang didn't let Chu Kong finish speaking and interrupted him. “A sinful god from the eighteenth floor has been escaped to the human realm, isn't that it? I am now writing a report

and was about to bring it to heaven to let the Jade Emperor assign the heaven's general and military to arrest the sinful god."

I froze for a moment. Yanwang actually can work so efficiently. Can it be that the matter of the sinful god escaping, be an event that can destroy heaven?

Chu Kong's eyebrows also rose. He nodded and said: "In short, I've already reported this matter. The hole has also been closed. Yanwang is going to heaven. You can take me and this thing beside me with you."

"Sorry."

Yanwang's body backed slightly and leaned on the chair. He looked serious: "I'm afraid that this time I can't take you two....."

Yanwang's voice hardly left, Chu Kong expression turned serious. He grabbed me and walked away.

"If that's so, then we'll go back ourselves."

"Ah, ah! Wait, wait, ah! Celestial star Chu Kong! Aiyou, don't be like this, ah! If there's something, let's discuss it!"

Yanwang kept calling from behind. He was so anxious that he almost cried out.

"I really don't have anyone, ah! I really have no other way. If there's another person, I definitely won't have bothered you! Everyone's life is in the grasp of your hands. Celestial Chu Kong, how can you neglect a god's duty?!"

Chu Kong's footsteps halted. I crashed into his back. My nose turned red. I turned to Yanwang and said: "We're hurrying back to get married! The fate of the bad guys will be unlucky their whole life!"

"Aiya, you two really got together. I won the gamble in heaven"

"Don't chat about this and that," Chu Kong said slightly angry. "Xiaoye just messed up a few red strings. You all have been looking at me as a joke and called me to do so many things! You said to fill the hole and go back to heaven. Xiaoye won't do anything else. If

you love to give yourself headaches then go on. It has nothing to do with me.”

“Does it really has nothing to do with you,” Yanwang’s voice sank. “Do you know who the sinful god is who escaped the netherworld? Celestial star Chu Kong, do you know that you have been worshipped as a star under the Morning God? But beside star we still have to call you celestial?”

I was also curious and looked at Chu Kong. He frowned: “How would I know? They’ve been calling me like that since I was a child.”

Yanwang said solemnly: “The sinful god who escapes is called Jin Lian. Long ago, he is the first disciple of the South Pole God. Because of his talent, he won the South Pole God’s love. He was the most favorite disciple of the South Pole God. After completing his practice, he liked to go to the human realm to seek for baby’s that has spiritual power and let them cultivate into an immortal. Many war general’s came from Jin Lian. His identity is very noble. Besides Chu Kong, you’re also one of the baby’s that he sought. The sinful god that escaped today is also your shifu.”

I am shocked. Chu Kong is also shocked. I suddenly remembered just before entering the netherworld, Jin Lian’s pensive eyes. Could.....it be that he has already recognized Chu Kong?

Chu Kong frowned: “I only remember that I once had a shifu, but I only know that that shifu suddenly disappeared. All the disciples scattered. He.....such a person, why will he be locked in the eighteenth floor?”

Yanwang sighed loudly: “Naturally, you won’t remember this. The key to the spell that Jin Lian God was practicing is that he needed the assistance of another refined transformation. He let his sister Jin Luo went down to search for it. But after going down, she didn’t come back. Later Jin Lian God became obsessed (走火入魔, walking fire into the demon), committed many sins and has been thrown into hell.”

So this is another tragedy of life.....

But I thought of that blond haired man's cunning and perverted appearance. He really doesn't seem like someone who'll wait patiently in heaven or a fool who has been cheated by his sister. There must still be many hidden secrets.....

The air was silent for a while. Chu Kong pulled without care and continued to walk to the door. Yanwang shouted: "Hey! Celestial star Chu Kong, are you really still leaving?!"

"A broken matter from so many years ago, what does it still has to do with me? Regardless, go find someone else. I won't help with anything."

Yanwang was silent for a while: "Even if it is related to Xiao Xiang Zi, will you still not help?"

I halted my and Chu Kong's pace. I turned and looked at Yanwang: "Related to me? Does he want my life?"

"Last time when you and Chu Kong reincarnated into the princess' and the general's bodies, there was an error in time. The time in which you needed to reincarnate was late by decades. This is a mistake that shouldn't have occurred. I specifically investigated it. Xiao Xiang Zi, has you ever been attacked by that evil energy?"

I scratched my head: "It should be....."

Chu Kong glared at me: "Why didn't you tell me?!"

"I didn't know what it was then."

Yanwang nodded: "Indeed, the evil energy must've wrapped around Xiao Xiang Zi's whole body then, letting an error happen when you reincarnated. Now it has invaded in your soul. After that, it'll disturb your mind. Jin Lian is already obsessed. He escaped from hell. If we let his cultivation get higher; in the future, maybe he'll use this evil energy to control Xiao Xiang Zi."

My face paled. Chu Kong frowned: "To put it plainly, Xiaoye can't beat him. What do you want me to do in the human realm?"

Yanwang grinned: "I won't let you fight your shifu. I only want you to

drag his steps in cultivating. As you know, one day in heaven is one year in the human realm. I go up to ask for soldiers. I certainly can't get down in a year or half. In this time if Jin Lian causes trouble, I'll not know how the human realm will turn out to look like. So, I hope you two to go drag down Jin Lian's pace. Disrupting his plans will be good. After all, if I get reinforcement and get rid of Jin Lian, Xiao Xiang Zi will also be safe. You can go back to heaven, get married and lead a happy life."

Chu Kong looked at me for a while and then gritted his teeth: "This matter.....there won't be a next time."

## Chapter 42

---

Once again we came into the human realm after going into the well of reincarnation. After getting rid of the feeling of reincarnation, I looked at the surroundings. The weeds have grown. The dark clouds are a sign that it's night. I asked the Chu Kong beside me: "Do you also have a queasy feeling after going into the well of reincarnation?"

Chu Kong's gaze swept over me once. He was about to speak when suddenly his expression turned serious. He covered my mouth and pushed me into the bushes. He also squatted down. A dozen questions flashed through my heart. This time I and Chu Kong didn't cause a ruckus before reincarnating. Even if we obediently reincarnate like this, still something will happen?

I looked alarmed at Chu Kong. He covered my mouth without letting go. He made a gesture that I need to be silent. At this time, I heard the voice that is like a nightmare: "Found it yet?"

My thoughts broke and I hold my breath. I let half my head get out of the bush for exploration. I saw in front of us about a foot away the light blond man called Jin Lian with his hand on his back asking another.....demon?

"Answering my lord, there has been a little demon reporting that the stone demon of ten thousand years is at Qi Wei border." (the border of Qi and Wei country)

"Qi Wei border?"

Jin Lian touched his chin and laughed: "This demon really likes to be in places with many people. Watch him, don't let him escape."

"Yes," the demon answered with respect. He wondered: "Won't my lord go together with this small one?"

Chu Kong's hand covering my mouth suddenly tightened. He whispered in my ear: "Hold me tight."

His voice was really serious. I stretched out my hand and hugged his waist.

Jin Lian laughed for unknown reason: "Even if I have to go, I first need to clean up the guy who is blocking my road."

Hearing him said those words, my heart tightened. My feet went soft. Chu Kong held my shoulder, used a little strength and we went into the sky.

I looked down and saw that the bushes where we just have hidden, have been turned into dust.

My heart was just about to get scared when Jin Lian continued to say: "Yi."

He looked at us from the ground. "Why is it you two again?"

The fact is.....that we also didn't want to come.

"This is also good. It'll spare me from going to look for you two in the future."

Hearing those words, Chu Kong stiffened. I tugged at Chu Kong's sleeves and whispered: "Run to above."

Chu Kong's soul suddenly came back, mustered some effort and run into the sky. Jin Lian obviously doesn't put us in his eyes. He waved his hand and casually threw two balls of evil energy at us.

I pounded on my chest with pride and said: "Don't meddle. This time, I'll take care of it."

I stretched my hand in the sky and concentrated on my immortal power. Clouds descended from the sky. Last time I was too injured and couldn't make it happen. This time even though I still couldn't beat Jin Lian, but while he is underestimating his enemies, escaping from him wouldn't be a problem.

The clouds gathered. I waved my hands and the clouds sprang to Jin Lian.

"Run now."

I didn't need to say it. Chu Kong grabbed my waist and fly away in a blink of eye.

We escaped from night till morning. We estimated that Jin Lian won't go after us for now. We stopped at the roadside to rest.

"That shifu of yours.....what does he want to do?"

I breathed for a while before I could spit out those words. Chu Kong is also catching a breath beside me. Hearing me asking him that, he thought for a moment before he said: "Who knows. But just now, did you hear him say that he'll go to Qi Wei border to look for a stone demon of ten thousand years?"

I wondered: "I heard that, but what does it have to do with....."

My voice stopped. Suddenly someone flashed in my mind.

"Zihui!"

Besides Qi Wei border, isn't that the place where we met that woman called "a Luo" last time.....wait wait, a Luo?

I frowned and whispered loudly: "Last time, what did Yanwang say that Jin Lian's sister is called?"

Chu Kong looked at me and blurted out: "Jin Luo."

I looked at his face and knew that he thought the same as me: "Jin Lian has a sister called Jin Luo. Jin Luo helped him go to the human realm to search for the key for his practice, but never returned. Zihui once said to me that he willingly gave his heart to someone, but that someone did something wrong to him. And that woman called a Luo said that she is Zihui's wife. She is still guarding the stone cave even as a soul. Now that Jin Lian has escaped from hell, the first thing that he'll do is search for the stone demon of ten thousand years....."

I whispered: "These matters only lack a line to bind them together."

Chu Kong was silent together with me.

"If it's like that, let's go to that stone to find out. That soul is there.



The stone demon is there. Now even that Jin Lian is also going there. Yanwang only said to hinder Jin Lian's plan. We need to first find out what that plan is."

I agreed with a nod. Chu Kong glanced once at me: "Your body....."

"What?"

"Well, does Jin Lian's evil energy has some impact on you? I don't want to drag a nuisance with me."

"If you're worried for me just say so."

I looked at Chu Kong whose ears are getting red. I said helplessly: "When will you be more honest, ah? It'll be too late to, cry if I'm deceived by a glib man."

Seeing Chu Kong's face fall, I immediately appeased: "Alright, alright, I won't say this again. In fact that evil energy is nothing. Usually I won't feel its presence."

Chu Kong hmpfed coldly, turned away and said: "In the future if there's something wrong, immediately tell me."

Really a closed mouthed bastard.....

I and Chu Kong searched for a long time for the entrance of the cave from that time but didn't find it. By the time that we're beginning to be disheartened, in the sunset we suddenly saw Zihui. At this time he is standing at the edge of the river throwing three demon's body into the river. Seeing us, he was startled for a moment. Then he smiled: "What a coincidence. A Xiang lady, we meet again."

Chu Kong seemed to always have a wary feeling for Zihui. His face immediately turned ugly. He pulled me behind him and said: "Really not a coincidence. We came looking for you."

Zihui seemed really helpless: "I really have no other ideas about a Xiang lady. I've already tried my best to put you two together. Can Chu Kong hide your hostility again me? I'm really a really rare good demon."

Chu Kong hugged his arms and looked at Zihui coldly: "Well, good

demon, say, why did you steal that heart of mine then? Where has your original heart gone to? What is the relationship between Jin Luo, Jin Lian and you?"

Zihui was startled. His expression turned serious.

I poked Chu Kong to express criticism for his aggressive and forceful ways. I sighed. All the things that happened after we died one time, has something to do with Zihui.

Zihui cleared his expression. His gaze is like snow: "Jin Lian came out of hell?"

He laughed coldly: "He is still thinking about that heart of mine."

I and Chu Kong looked once at each other. Sure enough, the key for the practice that Jin Lian has sent Jin Luo to come down and look for, is Zihui's heart. Zihui obviously gifted his heart to Jin Luo. One might think that Jin Lian should have gotten that heart. Then why will he still become obsessed.....

Zihui laughed helplessly: "This is our grudge. Having pulled you two in it, I'm really sorry. First come in. A Luo also wants to see you."

## Chapter 43

---

Zihui led me and Chu Kong into the stone cave. The stone cave hasn't changed. It's just that I and Chu Kong are now in an immortal body, we obviously can feel the magic atmosphere.

When we entered the stone cave, the soul of a woman is sitting on a stone bench. Her head was looking at something in her hand. Zihui walked to her and squatted in front of the woman. He chuckled and looked up at her: "A Luo, I'm back."

A Luo looked up, looked at Zihui for a moment and then smiled: "Zihui, how's the sound of the birds outside?"

"I find them too noisy. I was afraid that they'll disturb your rest and drove them away. If you want to hear the birds, I'll go catch a few for you."

A Luo shook her head: "Only when the birds are free will they produce the most beautiful sounds."

Her eyes drifted to me. I was about to greet her when I heard her say laughingly: "Yesterday night, the wind broke the window. Later go and repair it."

Zihui didn't care about right and wrong: "Yes."

I looked at the wall behind me and looked at my hands and feet. I asked Chu Kong: "Did she say I was a broken window? Is she cursing me?"

Chu Kong didn't say anything. After Zihui put a Luo asleep did he ask: "What's the matter with her?"

A Luo's body which was lying on the stone bed flickered. It felt like that when no one is paying attention to her, she'll disappear.

Zihui looked at her for a long time before he said: "The soul's power is too weak. Sometimes she doesn't feel the changed in her surroundings. She can only live in her own fantasy. Just now she

must have thoughts about the days she lived with me.”

Chu Kong bluntly walked to the stone table and sat down. He stared at Zihui and said: “I think, you owe me and this thing an explanation. Do you know how much xiaoye has suffered because of Jin Lian’s moths?”

“It’s a long story,” Zihui helplessly smiled. “From ancient times there were rumors that the heart of a stone demon can reverse all things. In extremely rare case a stone can be cultivated into a demon. A stone demon of ten thousand years is even rarer. I, unfortunately, have cultivated into a stone demon and has wandered on earth for ten thousand years.”

His voice turned numb.

“Since you’ve already come here, presumably you must know about a Luo’s identity. She is called Jin Luo and is Jin Lian’s sister. The last step of Jin Lian’s practice needs the refined heart of a stone demon. So a Luo came down and encountered me.....The day before we were to get married, she let me willingly dig my heart out for her. At that time I didn’t know about the purpose of a Luo getting close to me. I also didn’t know what she wanted to do with my heart. In short, the next day she disappeared. A demon without heart wandered on earth for hundreds of years. The empty chest will ache from time to time. I used to think that dying is also good. But I wasn’t willing. I wanted to know the reason and I also wanted to see her again.....Later, I met you.”

Chu Kong’s expression sank. Silly Xiang really left a bad impression on him.

“At that time, I thought I was about to die.”

Zihui smiled faintly.

“Thank Chu Kong’s heart for saving my life and let me have an opportunity to learn about the matter of that year. When I found here, a Luo was still awake and told me the truth.”

Zihui touched a Luo’s head, but his hand only felt air.

“Chu Kong can you think of any immortal practice that needs the sacrifice of a demon or human?”

Chu Kong hesitated and didn't speak. Zihui's expression turned serious: “What Jin Lian is practicing isn't any immortal practice. He is taking the evil ways. That's why he needs a heart of a stone demon to change the evil energy in his body. A Luo didn't know about her brother's plan. Until later did she find out. At that time there were spies around us sent by Jin Lian. In order to prevent Jin Lian from coming down to look for me, that's why.....she took my heart and left. She hid it here. Then she dug her own heart and gave it to Jin Lian. Without the reversal power of the stone heart, Jin Lian soon became *walking fire into the demon*. Before Jin Luo has the time to come down and tell me, she was killed by the walking fire into the demon Jin Lian. Her soul scattered, leaving only a soul attached to this place. Even after death, she wanted to tell me..... and I always hated her.”

I wondered, the thing called heart isn't candy. You eat it and spit it out. Other people will lick it and still taste the sweetness.....or is it that everyone is somebody that can still live for hundreds of years without a heart?

While comparing, I felt that when Chu Kong dug out his heart he instantly turned weak.

Seeing everyone's serious expression I swallowed these heartless words.

Just then, I suddenly heard several clapping sounds: “Very good, very good. I thought that you have deceived my sister. You gave her a fake heart. I didn't expect that it was my stupid sister's own act, harming me so far.”

The air in the narrow room suddenly tensed. I subconsciously jumped behind Chu Kong. Only half of my head stuck out to look at that elegant Jin Lian.

“Aiya, we meet again. Really souls that are haunting me, ah.”

Jin Lian gaze first fell on Chu Kong. He laughed: “However seeing

my little disciple growing up like this, really make *wei shi*<sup>[1]</sup> comforted. But it's alright if you didn't help me, but you *stick your elbow outside*<sup>[2]</sup>."

Chu Kong sternly said: "Since we're gods, there's no outside or inside. You're taking the evil ways. I have to make an enemy of you."

No matter how I listen to it, hearing such justification coming out of Chu Kong's mouth felt really strange.

I looked up at him and saw his resolute look. There isn't the slightest bit of a joke. I suddenly felt that after Chu Kong met me he has always been changing. He's become more mature and more courageous. And I.....didn't seem to have changed.

Jin Lian smiled and said: "After wei shi get the stone demon's heart, wei shi won't have the evil energy anymore. So....."

His body moved and in a blink of eye he was in front of Zihui. One hand grabbed Zihui's neck. He laughed coldly: "Stone demon, if you don't want to suffer physical pain, then be a little more honest."

Zihui also laughed: "I've always wanted to see what Jin Luo's brother looked like. So it's only like this."

I looked at these two men laugh cynically. A chill burst in my heart. This a Luo lady's life is filled with guys with such fake laughter. Won't she be tired of living.....

I looked at Chu Kong again and still felt that his arrogant true nature is more to my taste.

The two men confronted for a while. Suddenly Zihui's body stiffened and he disappeared. At the same time, on the stone bed where a Luo is lying and at the place where I and Chu Kong was standing abruptly a circle formed, protecting us in it. Zihui's voice echoed in the cave: "A Xiang lady, this is originally a grudge between us. We shouldn't have dragged you in it. Be sure to protect yourself."

Jin Lian laughed heartily: "A thing that doesn't know his boundaries!"

He waved his hand and a black air poured straight into the cave. The

surrounding is immediately infected with a layer of black. When it spread to our side, it's blocked by the circle.

I anxiously tugged at Chu Kong's sleeve: "Do you want to help him?"

"If you go you'll only make the matter worse."

"Nonsense, of course the one who is going is you," I blurted out. In exchange I got Chu Kong's dissatisfied look. He said: "Right now it's difficult to see who have the upper or lower hand. Let's wait for a while and see."

I was surprised for a moment: "Since when did Zihui become so powerful?"

"Here is surrounded by stone walls which will make him extremely powerful. And his original heart is here, may also be some help. No matter how weak a stone demon of ten thousand years is, it's impossible for him to be that weak.

Chu Kong's voice hardly left when a few muffling sounds can be heard. A few stone pillars on the top of the cliff fell down, trapping Jin Lian in them. Zihui's figure suddenly appeared in the sky. His hand held a stone sword and it straightly aims for Jin Lian's head. The evil energy in Jin Lian's body rose, crushing the stones. His figure disappeared and in the next instant he was on the other side. He stroked his slightly disheveled blond hairs, smiled and said: "Really has somewhat real skills. So, now I'll also be somewhat serious."

Not waiting till he finished speaking, stone swords fell from the sky like rain. Each tip had magic and flashed purple.

Jin Lian's expression turned serious. He waved his hand, draw an arc and protected himself in it. Unexpectedly, suddenly a stone spear appeared from the ground behind him and aimed straight at Jin Lian. Jin dodged, but that stone spear still scratched his arm. Blood ripped on the ground. Jin Lian laughed coldly: "Well, well. This is what you yourself asked for."

His right hand covered the wound. His whole hand is stained with blood. Then he put his left hand on the ground and his mouth began

to read a spell. The cliff turned soft like cotton. After a moment a loud cough can be heard. Zihui fell down from the top and hit the ground. He got up. But he was clutching his chest and spit blood out. They didn't give each other half a minute of rest time. Their gaze met, walked to each other and the battle began again.

I did my best to look for a while. Then I lamented: "Movements too fast, became blind while seeing....."

I couldn't see who'll win or lose in their battle, but I know that their energy is more than this stone cave can bear. The roof buzzed, the ground trembled. It seemed like that the whole mountain is about to collapse.

At this time, Jin Luo, who has been sleeping on the stone bed all this time, opened her eyes. She sat up dazedly. She seemed like she couldn't see the battle before her. Blankly she looked at something in that air. With delicate voice, she said: "Zihui, tomorrow we'll get married."

The two people who were at battle stopped. I saw that Zihui's hand passed through Jin Lian's heart and he also has become like a person made of blood. I didn't know how much his body has suffered. From where he stands, he should not be able to see a Luo. Two black bloods poured out of his mouth. His voice sounded like clearly like always: "Right ah, the wedding dress has already been completed. Tomorrow, a Luo will become the most beautiful bride."

Jin Lian laughed coldly. There was also blood on his lips.

"There's only a scattered soul left. My sister won't look so pitiful and humble!"

He waved his hand. An evil energy went straight to a Luo, but has been stopped by the circle that Zihui has put. Jin Lian waved again. Zihui's eyes turned red. His expression looked collected. I don't know from where the energy came from his wretched body. He pulled out the hand piercing through Jin Lian's heart. He struck Jin Lian with a palm on Jin Lian's chest. The initial blow didn't cause much harm for Jin Lian, but the next moment Jin Lian's face changed. He grabbed Zihui's arm like he wanted to break it. But



Zihui's whole body is slowly changing into stone.

Chu Kong's body stiffened: "Not good! He wants to die with Jin Lian!"

While saying that, Chu Kong was about to rush out, but Zihui turned around. He barely put a smile on his stiff face: "In this life, I'm sorry to you two."

After he said that, Jin Lian shivered and vomited blood. Zihui's whole body turned into a statue. Jin Lian was furious: "A mere stone demon dares to disrupt my plans?!"

He waved his hand. The statue turned into dust and scattered on the ground. The circle in front of us also broke. Lights floated in front of me for a while and then disappeared from this world.

---

### Notes

1. Wei shi is what a shifu call himself.
2. Jin Lian means that Chu Kong is helping outsiders.

# Chapter 44

---

## Parrrt 1

---

I covered my mouth. I didn't know what to say in horror. Jin Lian is clutching his chest. His mouth is spitting big mouthfuls of blood. His face gradually became haggard like a vampire. His body is covered in layers of evil energy making people feel stuffy. Behind the layers of darkness, I saw that Jin Lian turned and looked at our side. His eyes became crimson red. His cheeks sank. He stretched his hand to me: "Offering."

The evil energy completely surrounded me and Chu Kong. Even with Chu Kong in front of me, I can still feel that there's a huge strength pulling us to Jin Lian.

Chu Kong's body tightened. He is presumably fighting with the evil energy. I let the evil energy go down and firmly nailed myself on the ground. I stretched my hand and held Chu Kong's waist to share part of his strength.

Who would have thought that Jin Lian will break the evil energy and came to us? His hand reached out for Chu Kong's neck. Chu Kong was fighting the evil energy wholeheartedly and didn't expect Jin Lian's sudden move. He was surprised and subconsciously backed a few steps. But it lets the evil energy roll on his ankle. His footsteps turned unstable. The huge strength immediately pulled Chu Kong to Jin Lian.

I staggered and was also being dragged. Just then I realized how powerful the strength was that Chu Kong has been blocking for me. I saw Jin Lian's hand is about to touch Chu Kong's neck. The dark gas around his hand is like poison of the touch of death.

Suddenly, in my mind flashed; long time ago when I was still silly Xiang, the image of Chu Kong slowly pulling his heart out because of me.

My heart suddenly burst. I didn't know from where the strength came from. My feet paused on the ground and firmly stay rooted on the ground. Then I raised my hand. Facing Jin Lian's face, I slap him.

A shout sounded. Jin Lian has been slapped by me on one side and crashed onto the other side of the cave. A roar sounded. The pillars of the cave came down and fell on the ground. Countless of dust stirred up.

The evil energy broke. Chu Kong turned his hand and looked at me surprised. I gasped and said: "Don't look at me. Even the milk that I have drunken (when she was a baby) has been used."

Although I didn't drink much milk, but I know that this is my greatest ability.

Didn't let us rest for much time, the evil energy rose again from the piles of broken stones. A haggard and somewhat pale hand stuck out from the piles of stones. My soul trembled. My heart felt the endless chills. Jin Lian looks nothing like a god anymore. He just looked like an evil ghost: "Ha-ha....."

He climbed out of the piles of stones and inexplicable began to laugh: "Hahahaha!"

"In this life, I accepted ninety disciples. Eighty eight has been used by me after they cultivated into an immortal. I'll take their head with their five senses or take their skin and bones to be used solely on my body. That time, you were still young. I wanted to do my best and take care of you and strive to let you cultivate. I searched for the best heart for myself. Who would have thought that Jin Luo would betray me? Even more who would have thought I would be blocked by you?"

I nodded: "No wonder how much I looked at you, you seem to lack a heart and a lung....."

Jin Lian totally didn't listen to what I said. He kept laughing like a maniac.

"Since the desire that I've for thousands of years can't be fulfilled; today I'll let every human accompany me!"

Let all humans accompany him? There are so many humans. Is Jin Lian joking?

I was really shocked. The surrounding evil energy condensed and poured into earth like animals.

Chu Kong's expression changed. I didn't understand so I asked him: "Has he become crazy? What is he doing?"

Chu Kong looked at little pale. He turned and looked at me once. I felt that his gaze was a little different from usual. But I can't say where it's different. While I was still thinking, Chu Kong flicked my forehead. I was startled and my body immediately stiffened. I couldn't move.

"In the future.....remarry someone else."

## **Part 2**

---

He rubbed my head. His expression was both gentle and helpless. This is the first time I saw such an expression on his face. My heart suddenly felt empty. I seemed to realize what he wants to do. I stared at him with big eyes. I wanted to stretch out my hand to pull him, but even my fingers couldn't move.

He retrieved his hand from my head and turned. He walked forwards. His steps were firm and calm. After each step a lotus came alive and swayed in full bloom behind him. His whole body broke the layers of dark evil energy open, making it so shiny that it blinded my eyes.

Looking at the straight chest of the immature young man of that time, he looked like a hero that can take the world.

Immortal's energy collided with evil energy turning into a sharp air current grazing my side. I watched Chu Kong turning into a golden light and went straight at Jin Lian, tightly tying the haggard Jin Lian. The evil energy on Jin Lian's whole body began to purify.

Chu Kong is clearly no match for Jin Lian. I understand that he can only use the power of his soul. Before the soul is exhausted, he

needs to give it a try. But.....if he is killed, he can't go to the netherworld anymore. He can't reincarnate anymore. He'll disappear for eternity.

Jin Lian screamed in pain. The golden light trapping him also trembled.

I used all my power to break this damn seal that Chu Kong put on my body. I've never been so resentful of my poor skills. I've also never been so resentful of Yue Lao for only transforming me into a "half quality thing." If I could have the same ability as Chu Kong..... even half will be good.....even half will be good!

Jin Lian's body fell down and died completely. His withered body finally turned into a blanket of darkness and intertwined with the golden light. Just listen to the rustling sound of the wind across my ears, a blazing white light came in front of my eyes. My vision blurred for a long time. Slowly it became clear again.

All four sided were quiet. If it wasn't for the broken ground that reminded me of the battle which just happened here, I would have thought that I just have a nightmare.

The evil energy is gone, Chu Kong is also gone.....

My body loosened. The seal that Chu Kong put on my body broke open. Also the person who puts the seal is gone, how can the seal be maintained? My legs went soft and I sat on the ground absent-minded.

"Yi?"

I pinched my legs.

"Why.....it's obviously safe....."

My mood became disorderly. It felt like someone is drumming my heart with a hammer, making it beat faster. Such a rhythm and tremors make it almost difficult for me to breathe.

I sat dully for a moment before I remembered that now I should go look for Chu Kong. Perhaps, he is just buried in this pile of stones.

I stood up and stumbled to the piles of stones. I forgot my immortal power and used my hand to take away the small, big, round or sharp stones. With every stone I moved, my heart will turn colder. The cold from my heart seemed to pass through the blood flow to my entire body. My hands and feet are cold. The blood flowing out through a cut on my fingertip is also cold. The air that I breathed out is also cold. Even the liquid in my eyes is cold.

“Arrogant Kong.....”

I couldn't help my heart beginning to feel fear. I called out: “Answer once. Answer me once. I'm not angry with you anymore. In the future, I won't get angry at you anymore.”

“You said you'll provide for me. Because of you I've lost ten copper coins. You still haven't paid me back. If you're gone, I'll remarry! I'll marry heavenly emperor Lee. I'll become a specialist of concubines and harm the gods in heaven. I.....”

These threats are useless, ah. Chu Kong already said to let me remarry. This time, he is really bent on leaving me.

Finally, I felt a touch of warmth in my eyes. But it's my tears rolling down and pitifully fell on my whole face. No matter if it's Chu Kong, arrogant Kong, princess Kong or Lu Hai Kong; this time they are really gone.

Perhaps, I should go search in the netherworld for him. Perhaps his soul isn't destroyed. Perhaps his soul is still there. After reincarnating I can see him again.

My mind and heart were together. I looked around for a dagger. But when I turned to the side of the stone bed, Jin Luo sat up. Her body is really too transparent like she'll be gone the next moment with the wind.

I stared at her blankly. Here there's now only we two “living things”.

A Luo suddenly laughed. She lifted her translucent and. From the palm of her hands suddenly grew purple pearl. It shone with brightness. Really beautiful.

“Zihui’s heart,” she laughed. “I think Zihui also wanted to help you.”

She held out her hand to hand the purple pearl to me.

“Life and death is a grand matter of heaven and earth. Even with a stone’s heart of ten thousand years with reversal power, I could barely bring back one soul.”

I was silent for a long time and didn’t get the meaning of those words yet. A Luo smiled gently. her body gradually disappeared in the air: “I can only compensate this much. I’m sorry.”

A Luo’s figure completely disappeared. Only a few scraps of light turned around a few times around this purple pearl and guided the pearl to me. I held by hand out blankly. It obediently lay into my palm.

I stayed dully for a long time, until a light suddenly opened my brain with many thoughts. I slapped my forehead, wiped my tears and bit my tongue to commit suicide.

Embarking on the road to the netherworld, I hold on to the purple pearl and ran all the way straight to Yanwang’s palace.

At this time Yanwang hasn’t returned yet. The magistrate is doing his work on his desk. He looked up and saw that the person who barged in is me and frowned: “How did you come back so soon? Didn’t we say to let you delay Jin Lian? Where is celestial star Chu Kong?”

I let the magistrate look at the purple pearl in my hand. He frowned and looked at it for a long time. Suddenly his expression changed: “How come Chu Kong’s soul is inside of it?! What disaster did you two cause above?!”

The magistrate sighed helplessly: “Originally, we already didn’t have much manpower. Now you even got rid of one of you! Is it a great pleasure to lit fire in your own backyard?”

I retrieved the hand holding the purple pearl and ignored the magistrate’s harsh words. I said: “Chu Kong died. He used his own soul and perished together with Jin Lian. For the specifics, you can

look at it in the mirror of the past.”

The magistrate was startled and changed his expression. On Yanwang’s desk, he took out the mirror of the past. He looked in silence in the mirror for a long time. Then he raised his head and looked at me: “If it’s like this, I’ll need to report it to the Jade emperor to bestow a posthumous title on celestial star Chu Kong.”

“He doesn’t want a posthumous title. You can’t even fart with that thing,” I said straightforwardly. “Tell me; is there a way to let him become an immortal again?”

The magistrate frowned, looked at me for a while and then sighed: “There is, but.....”

“If there is, then it’s good. I only need to know the way.”

No matter what kind of responsibility I have to bear, I’ll need to make Chu Kong become celestial star Chu Kong again. To let him stand once again before me and making me unable to remarry.

“To let the soul enter the circle of reincarnation again, the heavens and earth will only let him aggregate into a body of flesh and blood to lock the soul. Then you need to search for two immortal souls and six mortal souls of human Chu Kong. To search for mortal and immortal souls is simply impossible. Just give up on the idea.”

I reflected for a moment: “If I found them, will he be able to live?”

“After finding the mortal souls and immortal souls, they will only let him turn into a normal human. If he wants to turn into an immortal again, he needs to use his own efforts and cultivate again.”

I nodded and turned with the purple pearl to go, but the magistrate stopped me: “Could fairy, have you thought about it clearly? This isn’t a thing that can be done in one or two lifetimes. It won’t be strange if it takes a thousand years.”

I turned and glared at the magistrate once: “Why think so much? Searching till the time I don’t want to search anymore, giving up is fine. But no matter what time I give up in the future, I’ll have peace in my mind instead of giving up now. At least I made some effort for



him. In the future when I think about it, I won't regret because I'm indebted to one person."

I smiled: "Moreover, looking for something may be difficult for someone else. But I'm a cloud fairy, ah. Where are there no clouds in this world?"

The magistrate looked at me for a moment and then smiled: "Alright, you go. When Yanwang comes back, I'll explain to him."

I nodded and turned to walk away, when I suddenly think of one matter. I asked the magistrate: "You just looked in the mirror of the past. So do you know if a Luo and Zihui will have an afterlife?"

"That stone demon has a bad life, but he didn't hurt the soul. Naturally, there'll be a next life. But he committed too many sins. His next life will be distressful and full of hardships. Jin Luo fairy originally remained only because her soul is attached to the stone demon's heart. The moment she died, she is destined to not have an opportunity to reincarnate again. Finally, she used all her strength to drag celestial star Chu Kong's scattered soul back. Even the last power of the soul ceased to exist. Jin Luo fairy can say to have completely perished with no afterlife."

I opened my mouth but didn't know what to say. I sighed helplessly. Zihui and a Luo, two perfect match.....

If Zihui knows that a Luo isn't here anymore, he'll certainly be hurt. However, after this lifetime, even Zihui won't remember a Luo anymore because he has even forgotten hims

# Chapter 45

---

## Part 1

---

I'm standing before the well of reincarnation once again. But I'm not accustomed to the silence of this time. I turned back to look. The road to the netherworld is still the same. Nothing has changed. But I think that this time, the netherworld is colder than before.

The soul attached to the purple bead wandered out and went into the well of reincarnation to be reincarnated. Watching the soul disappear before me, I suddenly have some fear. I don't know in which family Chu Kong will be reincarnated in the next lifetime. I don't know when I'll find him in such a big world. I also don't know if when I see him again, how his appearance will be, but.....

Since I can't change reality, I can only put armor and face it. I keep the purple bead safely on me. Then I also jumped into the well of reincarnation.

Three years have passed on the human realm. Without Chu Kong by my side, this superficial lifetime is really splendid. Finally, I can enjoy it slowly. Without anyone to quarrel with, my life is surprisingly comfortable. Only until now, did I know how much trouble and unhappiness that arrogant Chu Kong brought.

However, every night, when I am quietly watching the stars, I'll still think of Chu Kong. Such unbearable thing happening all the time will let me shamelessly miss him. Chu Kong was never perfect. He has a cheap mouth and a bad temper. He also didn't do anything particular to make me happy. Even the fan, he has said himself that wanted to repay me, hasn't been repaid. But he has knocked a hole through my cold and steely heart and blatantly walked in it and looked at me arrogantly: "Xiaoye came to live inside it, what can you do about it?"

I wished that I can crush him to death, but I couldn't do anything. So I can only let him live inside it. He became a thorn, that's unable to

swallow and also unable to be spit out.

I don't know if this kind of feeling is the so called "love between man and woman". I only know that the moment I want to see him and see him, my sky will be cloudless.

So, to be able to see him at the moment I want to see him, these three years, I used all my effort to search for Chu Kong's immortal soul and four mortal souls. There's still one immortal soul and two mortal souls missing. I already did half of what the magistrate said will be done in a thousand years. Perhaps its destiny. Or perhaps Chu Kong's souls are also searching for me.

It's the end of March. Lovely flowers bloomed everywhere. I enjoyed the flowers all the way to Yan country's capital. It is said that currently in Yan country's palace are ghosts. Originally, it's normal for the palace to have some rumors about ghost. But now I can't afford to let go of even a little clue.

After entering the capital, I searched for an inn and registered in it. I paid for the room and immediately went to the palace's wall. I made a stealthy decision and entered the palace. I thought that most time the haunted place will be at the cold palace. I searched for a while before I found some palace maids who are bringing food to the cold palace. I followed behind them to find out the direction to the cold palace. I wanted to come back at night to take a careful look. But suddenly the purple pearl that I'm wearing around my neck brightened. I stared at it blankly for a while.

The one immortal soul and four mortal souls that I found, I put them in this purple pearl. Between souls there is a connection. After I found one missing soul, every time I found another missing soul, this purple pearl will brighten. This is also one of the reasons why I can find one immortal soul and four mortal souls so fast. It seems that in this palace there's really Chu Kong's missing soul.

I was so deep in thought and entered the cold palace together with the palace maids. The purple pearl brightened at once. This hasn't happened before. Can it be that here there's many of Chu Kong's souls hidden?

I looked up, puzzled. Under a dead tree in the cold palace, a meatball dressed in red is sitting on the ground. His pair of big eyes is peering at my.....purple pearl in front of my chest. I was also staring at him. This child's facial features are seventy or eighty percent like Chu Kong or even the once Lu Hai Kong.

I can't help but stare at him for a long time. But this child stared at me for a while and then turned and looked blankly at the sky. He looked a little stiff. This body which has one immortal soul and one mortal soul surely will be deformed.

The purple pearl floated up and seemed to be anxious to fuse together with the souls in the body. I looked at the room full of palace maids and quietly pressed the purple pearl down.

Fortunately, after the palace maids brought the food, they went away. Not long after, a thin woman walked out of the room. She sat at the table and called weakly: "Come eat."

I could see that she was calling meatball Kong, but meatball Kong ignored her. He just sat there and stared at the sky blankly.

I didn't know which nerve of the woman in the room has been poked. Suddenly she slammed on the table and swept half of the dishes on the ground. The voice of the broken plates tingled in my eardrum. Meatball Kong finally turned around and looked at the woman blankly: "Mother....."

"Don't call me!"

The woman grabbed her withered hair and screamed: "I'm not your mother! All is because of you! Because of you I've come to this state! I'm not your mother! I'm not!"

Her voice was shrill, but it only exchanged a word from meatball Kong: "Mother."

## **Part 2**

---

"I didn't give birth to you! I didn't give birth to you!"

Yan country's officials are extremely believers. Yan country is known for the saying that a crazy child will bring misfortune. Presumably this concubine has been banished by the emperor to the cold palace after giving birth to silly Chu Kong. Her whole life can be regarded as ruined. No wonder she hates her own child so much. But it happens that her son is the only one she can rely on.....

The woman suddenly stood up and came out. She slapped meatball Kong on his face, her sharp nails left three bloodstains on the child's face. Although the child is somewhat stupid, he still knows pain. Big tears fell out of his eyes on his whole face: "Mother....."

"How good will it be if I didn't give birth to you?!"

The woman began to beat him uncontrollably.

"How good will it be if you didn't come to this world?! Go away! Go away....."

I let my body be visible. I stand before Chu Kong and grabbed the woman's wrist. I glared at her: "Children aren't here to let you vent your anger on."

I continued: "I'm really sorry that he came out of your belly. Since you don't care for him, I'll care for him."

I let go of her hand. The woman's body went soft and slumped on the ground: "Ghost.....ghost!"

"I'm not a ghost."

Before I finished talking, that person breathed fast, her eyes turned white and fainted.

I didn't care about her, squatted down and touched meatball Kong disrupted hair. His eyes rested on the purple pearl. I didn't hesitate, took it down and put it on Chu Kong's chest. The one immortal soul and four mortal souls floated out and entered meatball Kong's body. I saw his dull eyes changed and showing a bit of smartness.

I wear the purple pearl once again. I took out a handkerchief to wipe his face full of blood and tears. I said: "From today on, you're called

Chu Kong and is someone cultivating to be an immortal. I'm called Xiao Xiang and am.....your shifu."

He didn't say anything and I also don't know what to say anymore. I put my hand out in front of him. He stared at it blankly for half an incense stick before he put his meaty hand in my palm. I gripped his hand, smiled and said: "Let's see if you can escape my palm in this lifetime, hehehe he."

Chu Kong isn't fit to live in crowded places right now. Besides, he's a prince. It won't be sure that in the future the struggle of the court won't harm him. I simply took him to the forest to live there safely.

On the foot of Lu Hua Mountain I built a house and live there with Chu Kong. With one more immortal soul and four mortal souls, Chu Kong is much smarter than before. I taught him how to read. I write down all the spells that Chu Kong taught me before for him to practice. But he still learns slowly. I can't help but feel impatient. This lifetime he is just a human. What will I do if he hasn't cultivated into an immortal, but has already died? After all, I'll be alive, living forever. I still have to search. The longer I am together with Chu Kong, the more afraid I'm that he'll be gone again.

Time passes quietly with me being a worried guardian. Chu Kong is already ten years old. There is still one mortal and one immortal soul left before Chu Kong's soul will be complete.

But I don't know why, Chu Kong has become increasingly against cultivation. He used all means to be lazy and played with all kinds of demons on the mountain. One time, a tree demon helped him write a talisman and he went to play with the tiger demon in town. He didn't return for two days. I was worried searched for him for two whole days. On the third day I saw him hobbling back refreshed. Blood shot to my eyes. I looked at him with a pale face: "Where have you been?"

Chu Kong's happy face stiffened. He looked at me afraid: "Xiao Xiang....."

I rustled my hand through my hair. I stood up, snapped a leg of a chair and hold it tightly in my hand. With a calm tone I said: "Come

here, we'll have some talk."

Chu Kong took a step back, startled. I slowly walked to him and squatted down. I asked: "Say, with whom you went play? Where did you go play?"

He tweaked for a long time and finally, weakly admitted under my forced eyes: "The town below the mountain.....together with Da Hua."

Da Hua is the tiger demon's name.

"Who told you to go?"

"The, the demons in the mountain said that I shouldn't always stay on the mountain. Should go out to see the world....."

I nodded in understanding. I took the leg of the chair and went out. I beat all the demons in the mountain. At the foot of the Lu Hua Mountain the demons are crying loudly. Finally, I bound the tiger demon Da Hua with a cable and brought him back. When Chu Kong saw Da Hua, he immediately rushed to him and asked: "Da Hua, did you suffer a beating? Does it hurt? I'm sorry....."

I sat on a chair, drink a mouthful of tea, calmed some of my emotions before I said: "What motive do you have to take Chu Kong down the mountain?"

Chu Kong's age, his fine skin and soft meat and his body with a little immortal cultivation are the demons whom walked the evil ways favorite food. They coax him to go down the mountain really make me worried. Before I let Chu Kong be in touch with the demons on this mountain is because I know that the demons aren't bad. And if they have a hidden agenda for Chu Kong.....

Listening to my questioning, Da Hua was so scared that he immediately cried: "Have mercy, fairy. This little demon wouldn't dare again. This little demon only felt that Chu Kong is on the mountain every day cultivating to be an immortal; his days are really monotonous. I kindly invited him down the mountain to for a tour. I don't have any malicious intent! Wu wu, fairy, have mercy, wu wu."

I put the teacup down and was about to speak when Chu Kong opened his arms and stood in front of Da Hua. He said: "Xiao Xiang, don't hit Da Hua. It's Chu Kong's fault. Chu Kong shouldn't have fun. I won't do it again. Don't hit her....."

He being like this made me think of Lu Hai Kong. I don't know in what year, he also stood in front of me protecting me from my prime minister father. And now he has totally forgotten it.

My soul returned to my body. I rubbed my forehead and said: "Chu Kong doesn't need to go down to see the world. After he cultivated an immortal body, he'll have a lot of time to play....."

My words hardly left when I heard Chu Kong said in a low voice with his head looking at the ground: "Why do I have to cultivate an immortal body?"

I was startled: "What did you say?"

Chu Kong gritted his teeth and said frankly: "Why does Chu Kong have to cultivate into an immortal? Why should I listen to Xiao Xiang's?"

Because if you don't cultivate into an immortal, how will you spend your life with me? If you don't cultivate into an immortal, how will you become celestial Chu Kong again? If you didn't cultivate into an immortal, how will you go back to heaven and marry me? And you still have so many promises that you didn't realize, why shouldn't you listen to me? Why not work hard to cultivate.....

However, I was shocked for a moment and suddenly woken up. The Chu Kong standing in front of me isn't the Chu Kong of the past anymore. To him the promises that celestial star Chu Kong made to me are like promises that someone he doesn't know made to me. It has nothing to do with him. He doesn't have the memories of the past. He is a new person.

What right do I have to put my own desires on him?

I froze for my own awareness. I just listen to Chu Kong who bowed his head. He said with a soft but firm voice: "I don't want to cultivate. I want to be like Da Hua. Because of such a thing you bully them,



Xiao Xiang is unreasonable.”

Faced with such accusations, I was speechless. I was silent for a while before I said: “Since you don’t want to cultivate, I am wrong.”

I retrieved the rope tying Da Hua and silently went into the house. Before closing the door, I said to them: “In the future if you don’t come back, remember to tell me. Don’t let me worry.”

Outside, two children’s clear voices passed into my ears: “Chu Kong, fairy seems really sad, ah. You should go apologize.”

Chu Kong sounded somewhat at loss: “How should I apologize?”

It should be me who should be apologizing to them. Suddenly the purple pearl in front of my chest brightened. This pearl dealt often with Chu Kong’s souls. It’ll react like it has some spiritual connection with them. Is Chu Kong’s soul near here? I put aside my complicated state of mind. I opened the window, jumped out and followed the direction of the purple pearl.

## Chapter 46

---

Following the purple pearl, I went out of the boundaries of Lu Hua Mountain. My heart felt strange. It's just a missing mortal soul of Chu Kong. How can it run so fast? Chasing till midnight, I felt a faint burst of a demon's energy coming at me.

I once heard Yue Lao say that there is deer-horse like demon who eats scattered souls. Could it be that Chu Kong's soul.....has been eaten by this guy!

My heart was frightened. I sped up my cloud and went straight into the sky. I fly to the demon. The deer-horse demon looks like it can endure a thing or two. With shaking head, he hurried to me. It felt like he is in joy. If you think about it, it's right. A demon that only eats souls can be that powerful. At this point, I don't know what he is chewing and wants to gulp it down to his stomach.

The purple pearl hanging on my neck, brightened. My heart became ruthless. I shouted: "Spit it out!"

I kicked the deer-horse demon severely on the side. This kick came suddenly, the demon screamed loudly. Many souls flew out of his mouth. The souls drifted away with the wind. I immediately chased the souls that were drifting away. The deer-horse demon behind me chased after me while screaming. I don't have a mind to mind about him. I followed the purple pearl and rapidly chased after the souls.

A scattered immortal soul can float really fast. It didn't take long before I caught up. I read the spell to collect the immortal soul. Chu Kong's immortal soul obediently went into the purple pearl. The horse-deer demon also sounded in my ears. I dodged sideways and didn't want to fight with him. I raised my hand and said: "Cloud come."

The cloud of the midnight rapidly came to me. The cloud wrapped the deer-horse demon in the direction of the sky and the sun. The sunlight blinded the deer-horse demon. I turned around and ran

away and left him far behind me.

I clutched the purple pearl. In the dark, I finally returned to Lu Hua Mountain. I followed the dark road and walked home. The closer I came to the wooden house I made, the more profound the depressed feeling became. The words that meatball Kong said before he left the house echoed in my ears. He doesn't want to cultivate. He doesn't want to become the celestial Chu Kong of the past. He.....only want to live freely in the human realm.

Since he has already said that, what significance does the thing I do now have? Using all my power to search for the souls he doesn't want. Using my best efforts to teach him cultivation.....

I suddenly have a shame that will leave my face hot and my ass cold.

I looked up at the moon in the sky. I turned and walked in the direction of the forest of Lu Hua mountain.

In the day the little demons of Lu Hua Mountain have been beaten by me. In the night a lot disappeared. All the way I only heard insects. Unconsciously I walked to lake of the mountain. I looked at the other side of the lake and was lost in thoughts. How many years ago when I was a tiger did a wild boar appeared on the other side of the lake and quietly stared at me.....

Even in such a depressed mood now, when I thought about that scene, I laughed with a "pu" sound. I laughed alone at the lake while stomping my feet. But the night was really too cold, letting me gradually close my mouth.

That Chu Kong.....who bicker and fight with me, maybe will never come back.

I lowered my eyes. My mood was difficult to describe.

I walked up along the side of the lake. The sound of the lake tinkled in my ears. The sound of the water made me feel somewhat lively and cheerful. I find a place with grace and sat down. I quietly stared at the sky full of stars. For the first time I felt that the future is confusing. If I am not obsessed with Chu Kong anymore, then what

should I go do? What were the days like before I met Chu Kong? I actually couldn't remember it anymore.

The purple pear brightened. I hold it. Today I found Chu Kong's immortal soul. If I give him this immortal soul back to him, there'll only be a mortal soul left before his soul is completed. If by that time, his thought is still the same as now.....

I'll go back to Yue Lao and continue to watch the doors for him.

While I was thinking like that, suddenly I heard a voice sobbing on the other side of the lake. This sound is so familiar to me. I looked and saw meatball Kong standing at the edge of the other side of the lake with a face full of tears and snot. Facing the moonlight making his face sparkling, I saw him crying so pitifully. I was startled.

I stood up and called: "Chu Kong, you....." *Why aren't you staying home? Why did you come here?*

I haven't even asked when the meatball Kong at the other side cried with a hoarse voice: "Wu wa! Xiao Xiang! Wu wa!"

He cried so pitifully, making me take half a step back. Because this child has a crippled soul since small, his reactions are relatively slow. So he didn't show many feelings. This sudden burst of him can't help but make me alarmed.

He saw me take a step back and looked more panic stricken. He didn't care and stepped into the lake and ran staggering to me. He didn't wait for me to help him and plummeted in front of me. With a body full of cold water, he rushed to me. The water wet my shoes. The meatball who isn't tall enough, stretched his hand and hugged my waist. He head glued to my belly. He began to cry out: "Don't go, Chu Kong is wrong. Chu Kong won't make you angry anymore and won't go down the mountain to play anymore! I am wrong!"

I froze for a long time: "Did the demons on the mountain come and beat you out of revenge when I was away?"

His face rubbed twice against my belly, making me full of snot.

"You're an immortal, wu.....Da Hua said you went away and went to

heaven to be a free and happy immortal.....you'll live very happily, and.....and will never come back! You wouldn't want me anymore.....wu wu."

His voice was muffled and mixed with hoarseness. I heard vaguely what he said. I was startled, hesitated and said: "I just went to catch a demon."

Meatball Kong hugged me tighter: "Xiao Xiang, don't run away with the demon."

I didn't know if I should laugh or cry. When I could react again, my heart felt warm. I don't know what kind of nerves has been satisfied. It slowly pulled my mouth up.

He being like this, must be because he is afraid that I'm leaving. Even if he doesn't want to cultivate and doesn't want to listen to me but in meatball Kong's mind I'm still someone special with whom he can't part with.

I seemed to hear the wild laugh from the depths of my heart. I squatted down. I looked at the immortal soul in the purple pearl slowly drift into his eyebrows. I touched his head: "Is Chu Kong afraid that Xiao Xiang won't want you?"

To him, a soul entering his body doesn't have much feeling. He honestly nodded. With a face full of tears he answered me: "Afraid."

My mouth couldn't help but rise again. I restrained the joy in my heart, dropped my eyes and said sadly: "But the two days that you went to play down the mountain, I thought you didn't want me anymore."

Chu Kong immediately shook his head. He seemed in panic: "I didn't! I I.....Xiao Xiang.....I'm wrong. Next time I won't be like that anymore."

He raised his head and hugged my neck. His head rubbed against my neck.

"Xiao Xiang, don't be angry. I really know I'm wrong."

I glanced at him, pinched his cheek and pulled him away. My heart is bursting with excitement. So when the intelligence and power are above of other, would hold such a sense of superiority. At this moment I understand why in the lifetime of silly Xiang, Chu Kong liked to pinch my face. So this is the perfect feeling of the combination of possessiveness and superiority.

While I was being happy in my heart, I didn't forget tease Chu Kong. I said: "Let's make a deal."

I held out my pink and indicated for Chu Kong to hold out his.

"In the future if you still need me, I'll always be by your side. Always stay with you."

Chu Kong froze for a moment. The tears began to fall again. He wiped his tears. His hand tightly clutched my pink: "En, I'll always want Xiao Xiang. Forever want."

Before I always put a face of shifu and never calculated Chu Kong like this. I always had a solemn face more than a laughing face, covering my original character with seriousness. At this point I know that I should also combine education well with incentives and penalties. Like that I can achieve a faithful dog. I squeezed Chu Kong's face and said laughingly: "Good child."

Chu Kong looked at me blankly for a moment. He raised his hand and touched my face: "Xiao Xiang laughing like this is the most like you."

I was startled. He also froze: "Yi.....I don't know why I said those words."

Because with one more mortal soul, Chu Kong's soul will be completed.

I asked him: "Does Chu Kong still not want to practice cultivation?"

He looked at me somewhat afraid: "Xiao Xiang, I'm sorry. I really don't like cultivation."

I nodded. I understand him, but still felt a little sad. Meatball Kong

really doesn't want to become the Chu Kong in my heart.

A few days passed after that night. These few days I no longer forced Chu Kong to practice cultivation. He is also not like the past looking for opportunities to slip out and play with the demons on the mountain. He is only staying at my side, guarding me. He followed me everywhere I go. It seems that I left for half a day a few days ago must have frightened him.

Today is a fine day. I was feeding the chickens in the backyard. Grains fell on the ground. Suddenly I felt a burst of wind with evil. I didn't need to say about the grains which have been blown away, but even the chickens have been blown away. I looked up. It's the deer-horse demon I hit a few days ago. This demon didn't have a change of heart and actually has been seeking me out for revenge. He actually found here.

The deer- horse demon stomped his hoof and hissed in the air. His voice is full of anger.

I looked left and right. Here is my home. Chu Kong froze behind me. He must not have seen such a big demon and has been scared to death. Here, I can't fully concentrate on dealing with him. I can only distract him and lead him away.

I took the opportunity while he is hissing at the sky, picked up some chicken poop and throw it in his mouth.

"What's there to hiss about? If you want to fight come with me!"

I put an enchantment around Chu Kong and protected him inside it.

"Hide well inside it"

I said that to him and didn't care about how he is pounding and stomping inside it. I went away on a cloud and flew from the foot of Lu Hua Mountain.

In the past Chu Kong always made that move on me. Today finally our roles changed. I felt a sense of satisfaction and pride.

After swallowing the chicken poop, the deer-horse demon became

more furious. He hooved pounded on the ground and followed behind me while catching up.



# Chapter 47

---

Getting further and further away from Lu Hua Mountain, I finally stopped. I turned around and glared at the deer-horse demon: “Stop! I let you go once and you still dare to come looking for trouble a second time? Do you really want to die?”

The deer-horse demon ignored me. He stomped his hooves and rushed to me while screaming. He came so fast, I barely dodged him. While he was passing, I reached out my hand and grabbed the horns on his head. My feeyt lifted, my body moved and I sat on his back. I riding on his back, made him extremely dissatisfied. He stomped his hooves in a fury and tried every way to toss me down.

My legs clamped his body tightly. My hands hold his horns tightly. While using force, did I feel that the thing on his head is actually made of meat. While squeezing it, it felt soft.....

Can it be that just now he wanted to corner me to death with these two meats? I laughed on his back: “Hey, you stupid. Now I don’t even have the heart to beat you anymore.”

Words can be said like that, but what needs to be beaten still have to be beaten.

I only used a hand to firmly pinch his flesh. With a little spell I connected his horns with me. With the other empty hand, I took out a fan. This fan is a human thing, but it’s very useful in many ways. I hold the fan and slapped the deer-horse demon’s ass.

“A thing with no eyes! Dare to come look for trouble! The previous time I didn’t beat you and it didn’t leave a memory. This time I’ll see if you don’t remember. Do you still dare to come cause trouble?!”

While I was slapping him, I was also teaching him a lesson.

The deer-horse demon felt pain and screamed more severely. His body was also desperately moving to throw me down. I held onto his horn tightly. The more he struggled the tighter I clenched his horn.

Finally.....because of carelessness, I only heard a “pu” sound. The horn that I was grabbing has been pulled out by me. Blood flew out from that hole and splashed all over my face.

Pu.....pulled out?

I squeezed the horn and was stunned. The deer-horse demon also didn't make any movements. He looked at me. I sat on his back for a while. Then I threw the fan and hurriedly stuffed the horn back in the hole.

“Sorry, sorry. I really didn't have the intention to pull your horn. This is an accident.....who told you to keep struggling?”

The blood from his head kept flowing out, making my hand full of blood.

Finally, the deer-horse can't bear the humiliation anymore. He stuck his forepaws upright in the sky. I wasn't paying attention and slid straightly down from his body. The deer-horse demon turned and bit my arm. His teeth were dull and didn't bite through the flesh. He shook his head and wanted to tear my arm off.

My heart tightened. I grabbed the horn and knocked on the angle of the hole. The deer horse demon gave two more strokes, couldn't bear the torture anymore and let go of my arm. He hissed in the sky and went away with an embarrassing defeat. While he went away he sprinkled the ground full of blood rain.

I waved to the oncoming cloud to stand still. I rested for a moment and looked at meat horn in my hand. In my heart, I was thinking that I can take it back and soak it wine. I might be able to get a different taste. I hid it in my arm. Then I rolled my sleeves and looked at my injury. I felt it isn't a big deal and leisurely went back home.

The closer I was from home, the more my heart felt that it isn't right. Although Chu Kong doesn't like to practice cultivation, but he has been forced by me and practiced for a few years. His body has a small amount of immortal energy. Today we run a stupid demon that came to search for revenge. If he was a bit smarter, he should've swallowed Chu Kong first and then come fight me. I can protect him

once, but I can't always protect him. If he doesn't even have some self-defense skills, it's given that in the future he'll be bullied.

Besides.....if he doesn't cultivate into an immortal body, how could I stay with him. Chu Kong being a human, when he goes to the netherworld to reincarnate will surely drink the soup of oblivion. At that time, every memory about me will be washed together with his soul. Just thinking about it, I'll feel afraid.

Back at home, Chu Kong is still being locked in the enchantment. Seeing that I was back, he immediately stood up. I waved my hand and the enchantment disappeared. Meatball Kong didn't run in my arms as I imagined. He just stood there blankly and looked at me with big eyes. His expression was startled.

I was at loss for a moment. I looked down at my clothes and instantly understood why Chu Kong was startled. The blood of the deer-horse demon dyed my white cotton clothes in red. My face and head must also be full of blood.

I sighed and was about to open my mouth to say that Chu Kong should not be worried. Suddenly I saw a golden light across my mind. My heart tightened. Well.....although deceiving children is negative, but it's all for his good.

I covered the arm that was bitten by the deer-horse demon. I groaned. My legs went soft and my whole body fell onto the ground. I closed my eyes and moaned in pain.

It was quiet for a while. I heard Chu Kong's footsteps rushing to me in panic.

"Xiao.....Xiao Xiang?"

I struggled to open my eyes, breathed for a moment and then called out: "A! !! The wound really hurts!"

If this is the Chu Kong from before, he'll slap me two times and let me get up myself. But meatball Kong is different. My whole body covered in blood is enough to scare him to death.

He held out his hand. They trembled and wanted to touch me, but

didn't dare to touch. With a pale face and a voice full of panic, he asked: "Where does it hurt? Xiao Xiang, where does it hurt?"

My heart went soft and I felt that this is a little shameful. But since the play has already begun, I need to do it well.

I coughed twice and made my voice hoarse: "I didn't think that the demon is so powerful. I've underestimated him."

I pulled up my sleeves and showed him the bite wound.

The deer horse demon didn't transform into a full demon yet. The demon's aura on his body is muddy and turbid. The aura remaining on my wound is also the same. A dark mist wrapped around my arm. It looks scary, but if you look at it with a clear mind, you'll be able to clean it.

Meatball Kong saw my wound and his face turned paler. I grabbed his hand and said: "Chu Kong, Xiao Xiang is useless. In the past I didn't practice cultivation properly. This time.....I'm afraid that I need to give my life....."

"It won't."

Chu Kong shook his head.

"Xiao Xiang is very powerful.....will not....."

His tears fell down. He stared at me unblinking like if he blinked I'll be gone.

"Even if I'm gone, you need to happily live on. Chu Kong, goodbye."

I closed my eyes. Hey.....this seemed to be a little overboard.

Chu Kong's voice was really small: "Xiao.....Xiao Xiang?"

I took a deep breath and opened my eyes. I grabbed Chu Kong's hand and said weakly: "There's still a way to save me, but.....forget it, forget it."

I was waiting for Chu Kong to give me a determination. But it was silent for a long while and he didn't say anything. I curiously looked at him. I saw that his eyes are surprisingly bright and staring at me.

My heart felt a little afraid. Can it be that this child saw that I was lying to him?

But after a while, meatball Kong came over and hugged my neck. He patted my back. With an adult tone he comforted me: "Xiao Xiang, don't be afraid. Chu Kong will always stay with you. Don't be afraid."  
*(Awww, this cute pie)*

But obviously, he is so afraid that he is trembling.

I sighed and didn't bother to pretend to be weak. I said: "Xiao Xiang won't die so easily. If every month someone uses immortal energy to drive away the demon's aura on my arm, Xiao Xiang won't die."

Chu Kong let go of me: "Every month drive the demon's aura away? Can, can Chu Kong do it now?"

"Can."

With my other hand, I touched his head.

"It's just that now you won't drive it away cleanly."

"I'll practice cultivation really hard," he swore loudly after getting my answer. "In the future, I'll surely practice cultivation!"

At this point his eyes finally are red. Big tears fell down.

"In the future, Chu Kong won't be lazy anymore. I want to practice cultivation really hard to protect Xiao Xiang. Never again.....never again letting Xiao Xiang getting hurt! Wu wa!"

This strange kid, he actually cried after knowing that I can be saved.

I don't know what meatball Kong was thinking at that moment when he saw me close my eyes. But after that time, he really practiced cultivating really hard. He was never lazy again. I thus realized one truth: Children and man.....need to be taught.

Time passed really fast in the human realm in a blink of eye, Chu Kong is eighteen years old.

Chu Kong with three immortal souls and seven mortal souls after years of practice is no different from an ordinary human. He

practiced cultivation faster and faster. After day in and day out learning about cultivation, he became increasingly interested in cultivating. He wanted to learn more and more.

Gradually, I have nothing more to teach him.

Chu Kong will often travel outside. But regardless where he went, every month on the fifteen, he'll surely return to Lu Hua mountain to disperse the "demon's aura" on my arm. This is an agreement he set since he was a child.

Although he and I both know that there simply isn't any demon's aura.

Seeing Chu Kong growing up, I'm naturally happy. My only worry is that he still hasn't cultivated into an immortal.

In the summer this year, the tiger demon Da Hua took a fancy on a scholar in town. She took him back to be her husband. The wedding day is set in the night of mid-autumn. I as a fairy of course don't allow such thing as forcing someone to be your husband. But when I went to Da Hua's territory a few times to take a look, I saw that scholar's half-hearted to leave, I let them continue their bad fate.

Chu Kong a someone who is cultivating into an immortal, naturally, wouldn't tolerate something like forcing someone to be your husband. But I didn't know what kind of ideological pollution he received all this years down the mountain. He insisted on taking the scholar back to town. In the end he has fallen out with his childhood playmate Da Hua a few times.

Mid-autumn festival eve. Chu Kong went to "save" that scholar once again. I followed him and brought him back. I taught him a lesson: "That scholar also likes Da Hua. Why do keep messing them up?"

I glanced at him: "Can it be that you also fancy that scholar?"

Chu Kong pouted: "Xiao Xiang, what are you thinking? Humans and demons go different paths. How can they be together?"

I wondered: "Why can't they be together? When Yue Lao pulls a string, no matter what kinds of thing, they still can be together."

Chu Kong hesitated and sighed: "Are all the immortals in heaven strange like Xiao Xiang? Head full of messy things."

I turned and walked away. I didn't even bother to turn his head back.

"The one who is strange now is you. The one whose head is full of messy things is also you. Can outsiders control such a thing as fate? Stop for me for a while."

Chu Kong behind me was silent for a while: "Then.....Xiao Xiang's fate, can I control (care about) it?"

My footsteps paused. I turned and looked at him. I saw that in his dark eyes, there's a star gleaming brightly and moving. My heart skipped a beat. My cheeks turned slightly hot.

"What?"

Chu Kong suddenly turned around and quickly shook his head: "Nothing, nothing. Today I should drive the demon's aura for Xiao Xiang. Let's go back quickly."

This midnight, because of Chu Kong's unknown words, I couldn't sleep. I stumbled and crawled out of bed to urinate. I just sat when I felt two night winds came in the house. I raised my head and looked up. Chu Kong was climbed on the window and quietly looked at me with a serious face.

I scratched my head and blurted out: "Did you wet your bed again?"

Chu Kong continued to stare at me. I recovered my brains. The Chu Kong now isn't the child Chu Kong whose mind was crippled anymore.

He was silent for half an incense stick and suddenly said: "I dreamed of Xiao Xiang closing your eyes.....in the snow."

He looked down at his hands.

"It felt real and doesn't seem like a dream. I was scared and couldn't sleep anymore. So I came to see you."

I understood the meaning of his words. I was instantly more awake:

“You.....”

“Regardless how much cultivation I’ve learned, I’m still like when I was a child. Still relying on Xiao Xiang. Really useless.....”

And I no longer focused on these things. With some urgency I interrupted him: “What did you dream of? When did you dream it? Is there still other things?”

Chu Kong raised his head and looked at me for a while. In his eyes he hid something I don’t understand. He shook his head: “No, I just dream of this.”

He is slowly beginning to remember!

I was extremely pleased. If I found the last mortal soul, if he can cultivate into an immortal, maybe Chu Kong can find all the memories back!

I said: “Chu Kong, in the future if you some other business, you don’t need to come back on the fifteenth.”

I sternly said: “You should now concentrate on the critical moment of cultivation. To see if you can cultivate into an immortal is dependent on the foundation that you laid in these years. If you have a chance outside, don’t give it up for me. You should have known a long time ago that there’s nothing here.”

Chu Kong stiffened. He froze for a long time before he weakly responded with an “en” sound.



## Chapter 48

---

The next day, I went to Da Hua's wedding and Chu Kong went down the mountain alone.

What I didn't expect is that Chu Kong didn't return for half a year after he left.

Midwinter, December.

Seeing that it's nearly New Year, I was contemplating if I should go out to look for Chu Kong. But I was afraid that he is practicing and that I'll cause chaos at his progress if I just went to him.

I hesitated for a few days and couldn't make up my mind if I should or shouldn't go search for Chu Kong. I suddenly realized that the ultimate aim of Heavenly emperor Lee has been achieved. This seventh lifetime, I and Chu Kong finally walked on the road of the play of the miserable love about the little wife chasing the husband!

On New Year's Eve, I dig up the wine made of the horn of the deer horse demon from the yard. Brewing it for so many years, I didn't have the heart to drink it. But this year's New Year's Eve didn't have Chu Kong to accompany me. At least a jar of wine can comfort my loneliness.

While I was thinking that, I opened the sealed jar. Suddenly, there were sounds of descending footsteps.

The smell of the wine is blooming. I looked up and saw Chu Kong returning from the snow. He was eventually reluctant to let me spend the New Year alone.

I smiled and waved at him: "You really know when to come back. I just opened the jar of wine. Come and have a taste."

Chu Kong stood outside for a moment. I felt it was strange.

"Come in, ah."

He scratched his head: "Xiao Xiang being like this, it's the same as I just left yesterday. All the things I prepared in my heart didn't come in use. Now I don't know what to do."

"You never have left."

That just slipped out of my mouth. Chu Kong froze again. After a long time did he come to me and sat down. I poured two cups of wine. I handed Chu Kong one cup and looked at him carefully. Seeing his ordinary body, it's hard not to feel disappointed. But now he's not even in his twenties. He still has some years left. I consoled myself and smiled: "Did you do something that'll make you embarrassed this time you went out? Say it to let Xiao Xiang be happy."

He shook his head, thought for a while and then said: "Didn't get embarrassed, but I met someone. He said I'm with three immortal souls and seven mortal souls. I'm still missing one mortal soul."

I sipped a mouthful wine and looked up at him: "En, that's right. You still miss one mortal soul."

Chu Kong dropped his head in silence. Watching the sky getting dark, the mountain is decorated and more lively than usual, making the foot of Lu Hua Mountain more deserted.

Chu Kong raised his head and gulped the cup of wine in one gulp. He gritted his teeth and asked: "Don't Xiao Xiang has more to tell me?"

I pondered for a while. I thought that Chu Kong isn't small anymore. His memory is gradually recovering. Instead of letting him guess and come up with strange things, I should just tell him everything.

I cleared my throat, sipped wine while recalling the things of the past. While I make these memories into words, I told him the whole story.

After I told him about the past six lifetimes, the sky has become completely dark. Down the mountain they light up fireworks, making the sky colorful.

After I drank the wine that was still in my cup, I looked up at Chu

Kong. I saw him hung his head. The hair on his forehead obscured his face, making me unable to understand him.

“So.....”

It was silent for a long time. Chu Kong laughed bitterly for unknown reason.

“What that person said are all actually true.”

I was at loss: “What?”

“What you see has never been me. It’s only that celestial star Chu Kong.”

I frowned: “You are Chu Kong.”

At this time, my words can’t get into Chu Kong’s ears. Like he has been possessed, he said: “I’ve always known that Xiao Xiang has many pasts. I also always believed that Xiao Xiang is living in this moment, but now.....you made it unable for me to believe anymore.....why, are you always clinging to the past?”

“What I cling to is only you.”

“It’s not me!” Chu Kong interrupted me. “What you care about is the memories. You only want me to become the celestial Chu Kong of the past. No matter if it’s cultivating into an immortal or retrieving the souls; the one who Xiao Xiang likes have never been me.”

He stared at me. His eyes have already become red.

I rubbed my throbbing forehead. I restrained my temper and said with patience: “You calm a little and hear what I’ve to say. After Lu Hai Kong from the first lifetime died, I also have been captured into this closed loop. But what for meaning does it have to care about these? As long as one has the same soul, the thing called body simply doesn’t matter for an immortal. You are you. You only have forgotten those memories temporarily. When you get your memories back, all of these wouldn’t matter anymore. You are Chu Kong, Chu Kong is you.....”

He couldn’t bear it anymore and said through gritted teeth: “I’m not

Chu Kong!"

He threw and broke the glass. He stood up, turned and walked away. The sound of shattering porcelain stabbed my sore eardrums.

I looked at the wine spilled all over the ground. All the concerns, being afraid and also the little injustice from all these years turned into anger, making me wear the red crown again.

I read a spell. My body dodged forward and stopped in front of Chu Kong: "You this bastard child....."

I stretched my hand to grab him and wanted to punish him; getting rid of his pants and slap him fiercely in the ass. I didn't think that my hands haven't even touched him, Chu Kong's body also moved. In a blink of eye, he disappeared in front of me. I turned and saw him walking down the mountain without looking back.

Today that guy really wants to get real with me, ah! I'm really angry now. I chanted a spell. A chain formed on my fingertips. I waved my hand. The golden chain went straight to Chu Kong. Seeing that the chain wanted to tie him, suddenly an evil energy came out of his body and shattered the chain into pieces.

I was shocked. My shadow flashed and fell in front of Chu Kong. I said with a serious face: "If you move again, you'll be carrying my body to Lu Hua Mountain."

Chu Kong really stopped. He turned to not look at me and is still angry. At this time, I don't have the time to care about his childish thoughts. I just peered at him and asked: "Who told you all of these? And who thought you the spells that came from your body?"

He was silent.

I took out a fan from my arms and grabbed it in my hand: "Do you say or not?"

He knew that I am really angry. He hesitated for a long while and in the end he spit two words out: "Jin Lian....."

I heard that name; I just felt that my eyes turned black. I almost

couldn't stand. The scene of Chu Kong dying together with Jin Lian popped out in my mind again. I rubbed my forehead and forced myself to calm down.

In the previous lifetime, his soul should've been scattered too. Could it be that he is the same as Chu Kong and has the power of the reversal in the world? But there no one who'll help him search for his souls, so he can only float around. Now he finally found Chu Kong.....does he wants to lure him in the evil ways?

I looked at Chu Kong who was in front of me coldly.

"When did you meet him?"

"Three years ago."

Actually it's been so long.....I'm really a failure. I actually have never noticed it.

"What I just told you; didn't it go into your ears? Jin Lian is that kind of person. You still dare to go find him now? Why do you think you have to suffer the pain of the soul being scattered? If it wasn't for him....."

"If it wasn't for him, I wouldn't have had a chance to meet Xiao Xiang."

Chu Kong's eyes fell on me. There's some sort of unspeakable pain.

"I don't know what kind of person celestial star Chu Kong is. Even though Xiao Xiang told me the story between you two, but for me it's just unfamiliar. In my life, there's only one Xiao Xiao. All that I do can be for you. However, all that Xiao Xiang does is for celestial star Chu Kong. No matter how much you say that we're the same person, but I don't know him and he doesn't know me. How do you want me to accept that you care about me just because you're caring about another stranger?"

While Chu Kong was talking, he keeps walking backwards: "The one who is a god and an immortal is celestial star Chu Kong. The one whose soul has been scattered is celestial star Chu Kong. The one who made an enemy out of Jin Lian is celestial star Chu Kong. The

one you like is also celestial star Chu Kong. And I'm not. I'm just being given celestial star Chu Kong's name by you. Over time, I've also lost my original name. I don't want to be Chu Kong anymore. I just want to be myself."

I froze. Suddenly I remembered that I've never stood in Chu Kong's point of view and considered his feelings. In his heart, there isn't that arrogant celestial star Chu Kong. He just exists because of him. He also thought that somebody cared about him is because of himself. When suddenly one day he found out that somebody took care of him it's simply because of someone he doesn't have any relation with. Even if that someone is his past life.

He must be really disappointed.....

I sighed. I held out my hand to him: "We go back and talk it out slowly, alright? That Jin Lian wants you to go into the evil ways. He isn't a good thing. Don't go find him."

Chu Kong shook his head: "Those words of Xiao Xiang are already too late. He used his last mortal soul to complete my soul. This lifetime, I don't want to cultivate. I just want to be myself."

I was stunned. The layers of anger are burning in my heart. Chu Kong used his life to kill the one who causes trouble for people. Now he actually wants to rely on that one's body to exist in this world. How ironic is this?!

He flew in the sky and went away while riding a cloud.

"Go be your fucking damn self!"

I gritted my teeth. The round fan in my hand moved and let the clouds under his feet scatter. I flew forward and captured his hand: "Even if I need to break your arms and legs today, I won't let you take a step from Lu Hua Mountain!"

Chu Kong turned to look at me. In his eyes hid a deep light.

"Xiao Xiang."

His voice actually came from behind me. I was astonished. I saw

that the hand which I grabbed from this Chu Kong turned into white smoke and disappeared into air. A shadow is hanging over me from behind. I looked up. Chu Kong is standing behind me. His lips moved: "I'm sorry."

Very well, this dude actually learned how to use tricks to lie to people!

I felt a pain in my neck. The things in front of me slowly began to blur. I only have one thought in my head. Chu Kong, this child.....has turned bad.....

## Chapter 49

---

I woke up while clutching my sore neck. Lying in the snow for the whole night, my body is the same as frozen. That bastard child really made me faint and let me sleep in the snow for a whole night!

My heart hated it so much that I nearly vomited blood. I worked so hard to raise a child. For him I searched his mortal and immortal souls. Several time I almost lost my life. For whom else have I a cloud fairy put in so much effort? I almost saw victory, but Jin Lian butted in and stole my fruit! Old and new hate formed together. I wished I could throw his scattered soul to let to deer horse demon eat it away. Let him become a fertilizer to nourish the earth!

Behind the anger, there are many grievances and unwillingness. It's still alright if Jin Lian is a bad person, but Chu Kong actually followed a bad person away.....

How much did my teaching fail in the end?

I patted my face. I can't give up like this. All these debts, after Chu Kong regained his memories, I'll then slowly let him pay back!

I stood up. I felt a fierce evil energy rush behind me. I immediately chanted a protecting seal. I turned and only heard a screaming. Then a meaty horn poked onto my stomach.

A soft touch poked my stomach a little bit. I raised an eyebrow, looked at the familiar demon and asked: "Are you going to use this horn to stomp me to death?"

It seemed that the deer horse demon is still extremely vengeful. After so many years, he's still thinking of taking revenge on me.....

Usually he doesn't dare to do anything to me. Finally today he caught me when I'm injured. He must want to bully me to death. But why after living for so many years, his intelligence is still so easy to read?

I stretched my hand and hold his cool, meaty horn. The deer horse



demon turned stiff. It seemed like he thought of some bad memories. He didn't make any movements. I wondered: "Since you've come to take revenge, why are your actions so gentle? Your reactions are also a bit slow....."

I looked at the snow on his back and understood.

"You must've secretly observed the whole night and didn't dare to take action. Now you see that I'm going, you impatiently acted and recklessly rushed out, isn't that it?"

The deer horse demon turned stiffer.

I patted his horn and laughed: "Being stupid like this, how did you survive, ah?! How did you catch those scattered souls?!"

The words blurring out of my mouth made myself shocked. The deer horse demon being a professional hunter of scattered souls must have a way to drive away the likes of Jin Lian whose scattered immortal soul entered someone else's body!

It felt like a light opened in front of my eyes. I touched the deer horse demon's horn. I squatted down and looked into his eyes. I used all my gentleness from this lifetime: "Deer horse demon, little demon, sister asks you, oh, do you know how to drive out a scattered immortal soul that has entered someone else's body?"

My words went into the deer horse demon's mind. He took two steps back in horror with a look of ready to run away.

"Don't be afraid. Sister is a good immortal. Come, you tell me, is there a way to drive out a scattered soul?"

He nodded hesitantly. I was overjoyed. My eyes contained tears. I came up two steps and touched his furry face.

"Little demon, you see there's no place where life doesn't meet. You and I meeting each other is also a fate. Regardless of how we used to be in the past, here, we smiled and turned from enemies to allies to create a better tomorrow. What do you think?"

The deer horse demon took two steps back. He slanted his head

and looked sideways at me. Apparently he doesn't believe what I said just now. I gritted my teeth, continued smiling and went closer: "I won't hide anything; fairy sister needs to ask your help on something....."

The deer horse demon turned and walked away. My body moved and stopped in front of his body: "All right, say your condition. What do you want before you agree to help me?"

He looked at me. I took a deep breath and bowed: "I'm sorry for pulling your horn in the past."

He hmpfed two times. I said: "I'm sorry; I shouldn't have brewed wine with it."

He looked at me in disbelief as if he is asking: "You brewed my horn?"

I honestly apologized: "I'm sorry, yesterday on New Year's Eve; I accidentally drink it all and didn't leave a little for you....."

The deer horse demon hissed to the sky. His eyes seemed to contain a puddle of tears. He turned and leaped into the sky. At this time, I don't have any time to care about face, rushed forward and hugged his neck. I shouted: "I already have apologized to you, what more do you want?! I was wrong! All was my fault, alright?!"

He tossed his head and struggled to run. My heart was ruthless and I shouted: "Good! Stomp face! I let you stomp my face! You are free to step on! Free to vent your anger!"

The deer horse demon instantly looked at me. I let go of him. I tied my messy hair. I lay with my head on the ground and said: "Come stomp. Free to stomp. After you finished venting your anger, go with me to find someone."

In snowy days, the breath you breathed out will turn white when it touched with the air. The deer horse demon lifted his hoof and placed it above my face.

I closed my eyes. In my heart, I thought: Chu Kong, this old mother, because of you, put everything into fight.

I didn't think that I waited for a half a day and still didn't see the hoof fell on my face. But some warm water dropped on my face. I opened my eyes. I saw that the deer horse demon is silently crying above of me. Tears fell down. Really miserable.

My heart went soft. I raised my hand and touched his face.

"Don't cry anymore. Otherwise, when I go back to heaven and come down again, I'll take you down for a ride. I won't let other people laugh at you just because you have one horn."

He cried silently. I also take a while to comfort him. He reorganized his emotions. I was still thinking if I should just go when the deer horse demon bit my sleeve and let me continue on my road. This demon is a surprisingly good thing.....

So I no longer hid anything from him and straightforwardly told him: "My Chu Kong is missing one mortal soul. The scattered immortal soul of a bad immortal went into his body. That scattered immortal soul still has evil energy. It wants to lure Chu Kong into the evil ways. So after we find Chu Kong, you go and drive the scattered immortal soul out. Then I'll go purify it and then you can eat it directly turn him into feces and poop him out."

The deer horse demon obediently nodded.

I touched the purple pearl in front of my chest and borrowed its power to find the specific place where Chu Kong is.

While hunting Chu Kong down, I was afraid to rest. I was afraid that if I'm a little late, Chu Kong will be on the point of no return.

While looking for him with a really scared heart, I turned somewhat dishearten. The purple pearl on my chest finally sensed something.

My heart felt happy. I followed the bright purple pearl and went down of the road in the sky to see the environment below.

I was shocked. Here, it's actually the place where Jin Luo hid the stone demon's heart in the past.....It's also the place where Chu Kong has disappeared.

I shook my head to stabilize my mind.

Now here is only a mountain of a pile of stones. A lonely figure is there. I took a closer look. Isn't that Chu Kong?! The moment I saw him, it was like life entered my heart. I didn't beckon the deer horse demon and went straight down. I took a deep breath. I didn't wait for Chu Kong to see me, I whirled my arm, didn't say anything and hit Chu Kong straight in the face. From when he was small till he is an adult, I've never beat him like this. This time, I definitely can't be soft-hearted.

Chu Kong has been thrown far away with this punch and hit on a stone before he stopped flying. He got up on one knee and coughed through the dusts.

I didn't give him the chance to catch his breath. My body moved and fell in front of him. My mouth is reading a spell. A chain emitted from my fingertips and rapidly winds Chu Kong's whole body like a snake. Black evil energy formed from his body like that night wanting to shatter the chain into pieces.

With my other hand, I pulled out the fan. I shouted short: "Clean!"

From my whole body, emitted immortal energy to cleanse the evil energy.

Ever since Chu Kong's soul scattered in front of me, I spent a lot effort on practicing. Although it's still far away from a decent immortal, but it's still enough to beat the Chu Kong who only cultivated for ten or more years even if his body has Jin Lian's scattered immortal soul.

The evil energy dispersed. The chain tightly tied around Chu Kong. My expression turned serious and looked at him condescendingly: "What are you not satisfied with me? I can talk slowly with you about what kind of person you want to be. I can compromise, but I can't tolerate you walking into the evil ways. Being a God or an immortal even if you don't have the heart to do something for the humans, you still need to be an honest and good."

"Xiao Xiang."

Chu Kong looked up. His appearance is clean like in the past. But the smile on his lips showed great frustration.

“You never asked for my opinion? Why do I have to be a god or an immortal? I practiced cultivation just because I wanted to protect you, but what you want is not my protection.”

My throat is choking. I think that now no matter what I say to him, will not get to him.

I turned and called the deer horse demon. I was waiting for him to come when I felt a dense overflow of evil energy. I turned back astonished. The evil energy on Chu Kong's body got richer. The chain binding him began to rot.

That Jin Lian.....what has he done to Chu Kong?!

I was startled. I rushed forward to grab Chu Kong's hand. He turned to dodged and avoided looking at me.

I got angry. With the fastest speed I rushed to him. I exchanged a few blows with Chu Kong. There is a sword on his waist. Several times he wanted to pull it out, but he didn't pull it out. I know that he doesn't want to use his hands with me. My heart felt warm then it became ruthless again. I used force to trip his foot and pulled Chu Kong's clothes making him fall on the ground. I pressed him tightly and shouted: “Deer horse demon!”

A hiss sounded in the sky. The deer horse demon came from the sky. Chu Kong struggled. I pressed his neck and said: “You either kill me or either wait to be captured.”

I handsomely finished speaking, but Chu Kong gritted his teeth. He touched a stone and gentle threw it. While the deer horse demon is about to touch the ground, the deer horse demon felt a pain. He became unstable; his body turned one side and came straight down on my body.

I was in panic. Chu Kong took the opportunity and stood up quickly. I also wanted to stand up to catch him, but the deer horse demon is putting a heavy pressure on me. I scolded: “You a thing that can't do anything right but everything wrong!”

Chu Kong went away on a cloud. And I managed so difficult to find him. How can I let him escape?!

This goddamn thing that can't let people stop worrying!

# Chapter 50 Ending

---

## Part 1

---

I pushed the deer horse demon away and stood up. I raised the fan in my hand and shouted: "Cloud, come!"

The cloud under Chu Kong's feet came to me. I chanted a spell: "Arrow."

Soft clouds condensate into arrows. I wasn't soft hearted and pointed at Chu Kong. The cloud arrows shot out.

Chu Kong also isn't slow. He dodged right and left and escaped the wave of cloud arrows. He quietly looked back at me. His eyes showed frustration that he can't hide: "Xiao Xiang, don't follow me anymore. I'm not that celestial star Chu Kong that you want. Just take it as if you've never found or saw me in this lifetime."

I was so angry that I yelled: "Damn you! I used so much effort to raise you for more than ten years. You say to take it as if I've never found or saw you. Do I need to paint my eyes in black and pretend to be blind?! What right do you have?! What do I care about which Chu Kong you are. Even if today what I raised is a pig, I'll still not let others steal and eat it! Come back!"

Chu Kong's lips moved. It seemed like he wanted to say something, but in the end it went into his stomach.

I waved the round fan and summoned more clouds in the sky. I let them turn into sharp arrows. The fan went down. The arrows fell from the sky. Chu Kong avoided them in a flash but in a blink of eye, a few arrows hit him. The moment the arrows hit Chu Kong, they'll dissipate, but it still left on him a neither deep nor shallow wound.

My intention was to let him not be able to move, so I didn't use rain. But seeing his body full of blood, I still became soft-hearted.

The arrows in the sky became less. Chu Kong's body went soft and

he knelt on the ground. My heart tightened. Subconsciously I want to go help him, but I just took two steps and saw that the evil energy jumped out of Chu Kong's whole body. I was startled. The Chu Kong who was kneeling raised his head and looked at me. His left eye looked the same. His right eye is filled with a murderous red blood. Such a distant look from him let my backbone turn cold. It felt like seeing Jin Lian god from the past who can let people tremble with fear.

I swallowed saliva. In my heart I was thinking that I can't let this lifetime's Chu Kong be ruined by Jin Lian again even if I need to sacrifice my life. I picked up my courage and walked towards Chu Kong.

Chu Kong blinked like his soul (figuratively) just returned to his body. He coughed twice. Blood spilled from his lips. His expression has some panic like when he was a child and broke the dishes. That bewildered look.

"Don't come near me! Get away from me....."

He stepped back like he feared that I'll go and touch him.

"I don't want to be that celestial star Chu Kong who is high above others. I don't want to go back with you."

Hearing his words, I became more furious. Regardless, I leaped forward. I raised my hand and hold his shoulder. I didn't know if it was where the arrow shot him. When I touch it, my palm was full of blood.

My body stiffened. Chu Kong's shoulder went down and broke away from my hand. His hand stroke on my belly. Cold evil energy went into my body. I was forced to take two steps back and looked at Chu Kong in disbelief: "You.....really used your hands on me?"

Although I also used my hands on him. Although in the past I often used my hands on Chu Kong. Although, now he isn't the Chu Kong from the past anymore.....

Chu Kong is also looking at his hands in disbelief. He explained in panic: "Xiao Xiang, is not me....."



And now, I'm so angry that I can't hear his words anymore. I didn't even bother to use the utensils and flied forward. My hands grabbed Chu Kong's arms and my feet kicked Chu Kong's knee. It forced him to kneel down. I urgently yelled: "Deer horse demon!"

The deer horse demon who only observed at the side immediately ran forward. Chu Kong struggled, wanting to escape. I hold him tightly. Cold evil energy came from Chu Kong's arm on my wrist. Chu Kong struggled more powerful: "Let go of me!"

I didn't move. The deer horse demon came to us. He buried his head and used the horn to touch Chu Kong's forehead. Evil energy flowed out. The deer horse demon took two steps back with some fear.

To see if we can pull out Jin Lian's scattered immortal soul is only on one move. I gritted my teeth. With all my immortal energy I fight to suppress the evil energy. The harder I suppress, the more the evil energy struggled. It felt like a bite in my heart till my bones. I hold back the pain without saying a word.

While I was fighting with my life, I felt both fortunate and sorrow. Fortunate, because I only encountered one of Jin Lian's scattered immortal souls. With my power, I'm still capable to fight him. What I felt sorrow about is, at that time how much pain has Chu Kong tolerated to die together with Jin Lian and now.....his not sensible reincarnation want to follow Jin Lian in the evil ways!

Just thinking about it, it felt detestable!

I couldn't help but feel the anger boiling in my heart and severely kicked Chu Kong's ass. This time, he didn't have any reaction. Thinking about it, it's right. Jin Lian came into his soul. Now I make them separate, how can he feel well?

The evil energy pouring over the deer horse demon's horn is getting more and more. I vaguely saw that above Chu Kong's forehead a golden light flowed out. It's Jin Lian's scattered immortal soul! My heart is overjoyed and attentively suppressed the evil energy. Chu Kong tolerated the pain and groaned.

The deer horse demon hissed and raised his head in the sky.

Attached to the horn, amidst the black mist is a golden scattered immortal soul.

It's separated!

I'm overjoyed. I chanted a spell to purify it. The evil energy of the golden scattered immortal soul rose up quickly. The deer horse demon hissed in pain and shook his head while screaming miserably.

He wants to attach to the deer horse demon body!

I was startled and flied forward. With a hand, I seized the deer horse demon's horn and shouted: "If you don't want this last horn to also be pulled off, then don't move!"

The whole body of the deer horse demon stiffened and he honestly stopped moving, although his whole body is trembling in fear.

I took of the purple pearl from my neck. I don't know what use this thing has, but the things remaining on my body that I can use, there's only this left. So I didn't bother about the consequences and firmly held it in my hand. Both hand grasped the deer horse demon's horn. I called forth my immortal energy and emitted it. I shouted: "Cleanse!"

Suddenly there was silence between the earth and heaven. The purple pearl in my hand lightened brightly like the morning sunshine eliminating the muddy earth.

The glory faded. The deer horse demon's horn is still being pinched by me. The evil energy isn't here anymore. Jin Lian's scattered immortal soul also disappeared. I opened my palms and saw that the purple pearl in my hand has become a gray stone and didn't shine again.

His whole life, Jin Lian wanted to get Zihui's heart and to get the power of reversal. Now.....it can be considered that he last wish is fulfilled. And Zihui.....between the heaven and earth, there's no longer a person called Zihui. All the things that he has left have completely disappeared.

I sat on the ground. A burst of pain entered my wrist. It has been

invaded by Jin Lian's evil energy just now. This body can't be used again; otherwise it'll bring disaster to my soul and let me go in the evil ways.

I turned to look at Chu Kong. He came to me with a body full of blood. Then he kneeled in front of me, raised his hand but didn't dare to touch me.

I saw in his dark pupils a few lights. I said: "In fact, if I think about it, what you said isn't wrong."

He was startled.

"Perhaps you and Chu Kong are really two different people. Without his memory your character is also different, but I still like you."

I raised my hand and touched his head like before. His face was pale. His lips trembled like he was about to cry.

"I never thought that this lifetime will end in this manner. I also have never thought that the heaven used such a way to let me give up."

I touched his chest.

"I won't search for that last mortal soul anymore. I also can't search for it anymore. You don't want to remember the past. This lifetime can be considered that I did wrong. In the future, there isn't I to interfere with the freedom and the living alone that you want anymore."

"It's not like this.....Xiao Xiang, listen slowly to what I've to tell you. It's not like this.....it's not like this!"

The world slowly blurred in front of my eyes. I can also no longer see Chu Kong's face clearly. The cool breeze blew against my ear and made my eyes moist. I almost shed tears. I sighed: "Is or isn't.....let it be as you said....."

The road to the netherworld unfolded in front of me. I walked this road seven times. In the future, I'll not set a foot on it anymore.

I looked back and saw Chu Kong holding that body that didn't have sign of life anymore. He choked and whispered: "Don't leave me,

don't leave me.....”

I turned and embarked on the road to the netherworld. No matter which Chu Kong it is, in the future, I won't search anymore.

The netherworld.

While receiving all kind of looks from the little ghost, I entered Yanwang's palace. Yanwang was writing something on the desk. Hearing the door being opened by me, he looked up. He was startled and then looked behind me: “Where is celestial.....star Chu Kong?”

“In the human realm. He wants to be a mortal.”

The magistrate on the side raised his eyebrows: “You really gathered all his immortal souls?”

I nodded and just felt that I'm really tired: “The seven lifetimes of love fate have ended. Jin Lian also completely disappeared from this world. We.....we.....”

I lowered my eyes, paused and then said: “I've completed my tasks. Can I now restore my immortal body and return to heaven?”

Yanwang and the magistrate exchanged a glance. Both thought for a while. Yanwang said: “You can, but is it alright letting mortal celestial star Chu Kong on the human realm like that? If this lifetime, he came down to drink the soup of oblivion, in the future he will be a mortal forever.”

How can I not know such a thing? This kind of thing is also what I'm afraid of. In the future, there's no longer someone who has the same memories as me anymore leaving only I alone reminiscing about the past until I also gradually forget.

The promises that we made, there be no one to fulfil them. The experience of I and Chu Kong and all those emotions will become a thing of the past and cease to exist.

“Let him be a mortal,” I said. “This is what he desired.”

Yanwang pondered for a while before he said: “Xiao Xiang Zi, can it

be that you're sulking? But what did that celestial star Chu Kong without the memory did that made you unhappy?"

I glared at Yanwang. There's an unhappy feeling and a sense of being seen through.

"What does it have to do with you?! Take me back to heaven! I want to go back to heaven!"

Yanwang touched his nose and advised me: "Lovers can quarrel, but a quarrel is a quarrel. Such an important thing is not child's play. If in the future lifetimes, Chu Kong is a mortal, the one that'll be bitter is still you, ah. Besides....."

He whispered: "I bet ten golden teals."

When he said his ten golden teals, I thought about my ten copper coins. My heart felt more anger: "Yanwang, go persuade yourself if you want to take that thing back to heaven! I don't care anymore. He wants to endure in the human realm, then let him endure in the human realm! Just let him be!"

After saying that, I turned and walked away. I walked to the palace door and still didn't hear someone persuade me. I pouted: "Hey.....that, borrow your mirror of the past to me to let me play with it for a few days in heaven."

Yanwang looked at me with squinted eyes: "You, this brat, what for tricks are you planning?"

"A woman's secret."

## **Part 2**

---

### **1**

Returning to heaven felt both familiar and unfamiliar. The fairy friends that saw me came to greet me kindly. It seemed no different from the time before I went down.

Without one celestial star Chu Kong, heaven is still heaven. The immortals are cold and don't have so many feelings as humans.

Perhaps before going down I was also like that. Now.....

If I burry my head, I can smell the earth on my whole body.

Back to Yue Lao temple. The red strings in Yue Lao temple is still the same as always; a mess created by Yue Lao. They're so mixed together that you don't know where the one ends or begins.

I went to the backyard and saw Yue Lao sleeping with stolen wine. I deeply feel that all my bad habits are learned from this tricky Yue Lao.

I walked to him, grabbed his two white beards and mercilessly pulled them down.

"Aiyo," Yue Lao screamed in pain. He grabbed his chin and woke up. It took a moment before he saw me.

"Ah, Xiao Xiang Zi, you're back!"

I looked at him with squinted eyes. He sensibly changed the way he called me: "Alright, Xiao Xiang. The moment you come back, you tossed me, this old bone! By the way....."

Yue Lao looked left and right. Close to my ears, he asked: "When you were down, you weren't together with celestial star Chu Kong, right? Heaven made a bet. I bet you two won't be together. I put five golden teals!"

"Inside information."

I plucked his two long white beards out.

"If you don't want to lose money, quickly go change your bet."

Yue Lao looked at me with his round eyes. I laughed: "I bet all the wages from my whole life. I and Chu Kong can absolutely be together."

Yue Lao looked at me blankly for a while. He turned, took out an abacus and calculated: "Even with all the wages from your whole

life, they aren't worth five golden teals, ah. Your information is also notorious for being untrustworthy."

I twitched my mouth: "Whatever!"

After saying that I went back to my own room while holding the mirror of the past. I locked the door and put the mirror of the past above the desk. I felt emotionally complex. In fact, Yue Lao was right. Like my life wages isn't worth five golden teals, I also don't know if my information is correct or not. I'm just relying on my intuition or better said I'm gambling with the confidence I've in Chu Kong.

I definitely believe that Chu Kong won't want to go in the evil ways.

Even if he didn't have the memory of his past lives. Even if he really wanted to prove himself. Even if he's jealous and angry. But he'll definitely not follow Jin Lian's wish to want to go in the evil ways. After all he's always been a good person.

No matter if it's arrogant celestial star Chu Kong, Lu Hai Kong or meatball Kong, I've always believed that deep in his heart there's tenderness and kindness.

Moreover the thing about meatball Kong going into the evil ways is really strange. He said Jin Lian was in his body for three years. Since he was willing to let Jin Lian into his body, three years ago, why didn't he follow Jin Lian and chose to wait until now?

I dare to guess that meatball Kong was careless and Jin Lian entered his body. He has been affected by Jin Lian, but he was afraid that I'll be worried. So he never told me about this matter.

He cares about me. Besides it's an excessive care.

I looked in the mirror of the past. Waves formed in the mirror. I saw Chu Kong still holding the body that has been abandoned by me. His body was stiff. It looked like he also has become a corpse and will not move again.

"I'm not celestial star Chu Kong," he said quietly. His voice was hoarse. "In my heart there isn't immortal life of the heaven and earth

and there also isn't doing good things for the people. I just wanted to protect you. I just really wanted to protect you. What freedom. What living alone. They aren't what I want. To become the person you like. To let my figure enter your eyes, even if it's just for a moment, it'll be alright. Knowing that you like me will be enough."

"I really didn't want to make you angry. I was just afraid.....afraid that one day I can't control myself and hurt you. So I tried everything to leave you. I just thought....."

His voice choked. He buried his head in my neck like how I comforted him in the past.

"I just thought that I can't let that person in my body harm you. I just wanted to use all my effort to protect you. I just thought that if you say some disappointing words to me, after I died, will you be less sad?"

My heart felt pain. I listened to him continue saying: "I'm sorry. I'm so stupid.....I'm still as stupid as when I was a child. I couldn't think of a better idea!"

He broke down in tears.

"Get up and beat me. Get up and teach me a lesson. You can do as you like, just.....don't leave me."

"You know, my greatest fear is this....."

## 2

Sure enough, it's the same as I've guessed. I tried heart to suppress the complex emotions in my heart. I rationally analyzed.

Three years ago, Jin Lian's scattered immortal soul entered his body and began to tell him what happened in the past and trying hard to lure him in the evil ways. Chu Kong didn't listen to him, but the evil energy would certainly have an impact on Chu Kong.

For three years, Chu Kong came back once in the month on the fifteenth. The fifteenth of each month is the time where it's the most



clean on earth. He came back to see me then, must be because he is fully able to neutralize the evil energy. After that he didn't return for a few months. Probably his strength wasn't enough to suppress the evil energy in his body.

On New Year's Eve he came back. After I told him all the things that happened in the past, he looked for a reason, found an excuse, said some hateful words to anger me and made me faint. He looked at me helplessly and told me again and again to not go look for him.

When I think about it with a calm mind, actually all these acts, it's him who is saying goodbye to me.

He took Jin Lian to the place where former Chu Kong died together with Jin Lian. He wanted to put everything back to square one. He wanted me to take it as if in this lifetime I've never found him.

I thought that meatball Kong is already no different from an ordinary human, but now I know that he is still really stupid. He wanted to die with Jin Lian again and he was afraid that when he died, he won't know how to comfort me. So he took preventive measures. Using such a clumsy way to let me be disappointed in him, to let me lose all hope in him. When he left, then I'll not be sad.

Really.....

So extremely stupid!

He really thought that I was so stupid. He really thought that I couldn't see his strange behavior. Does he really think that if he did these things, he can protect me?

I gritted my teeth. At this time, I really want to grab his collar and roar: "What sort of thing did you become in this life?! See, into what you turned your fine life into?!"

But the things are now as they are. I should let them go. It can be considered that I won the bet between me and meatball Kong. As for the second bet.....

Meatball Kong, didn't you want to protect me? Aren't you really afraid of me leaving you?

Well, I'll stubbornly not let you be able to protect me. I've stubbornly died in front of you at least once to make you realize that what you did was wrong. It was useless!

If you're afraid of being left by me, practice cultivation with effort! Use all your effort to find your last mortal soul. Become an immortal with your own ability. Become celestial star Chu Kong. Become like a man and come search for me upright and frank in heaven.

I bet that meatball Kong have that courage and ability.

The Chu Kong in the mirror of the past is still choking with his head bowed. Perhaps for him, I've completely left. He needs time to walk out of the shadows. And I believe that Chu Kong's heart has always been strong. Only that kind of Chu Kong is worthy of being liked by me.

The deer horse demon beside him, used his horn to pat Chu Kong two times. It seemed like he wanted to comfort Chu Kong.

I closed the mirror of the past and thought: After Chu Kong comes back; we'll bring the deer horse demon to heaven. We'll ride him together. After that, we'll go let the promises that Chu Kong promised me come true.

For five days, I didn't touch the mirror of the past. As before, I watched Yue Lao's temple with sleep. The gamble in heaven about if I and Chu Kong can be together is getting more speculation fire. The immortals seeing that Chu Kong is now a mortal and seeing that I'm sleeping with an expression of not wanting to live anymore every day at Yue Lao temple, rushed to change their bet. They are resigned that we won't ever be together.

Yue Lao quietly took out five golden teals out of his small coffer and put them together with his other five golden teals. A total of ten golden teals. All put on the side of "will be together".

The immortals thought that Yue Lao did it only to comfort me. And I know that Yue Lao, this sort of stingy immortal, won't comfort me with their money. He eventually believed me.....

Or, it's because every day while I wasn't paying attention, he'll

quietly go into my room and look in the mirror of the past and believed in Chu Kong.

Five days in heaven is five years in the human realm. Meatball Kong is twenty three years old this year.

Today, I still don't intend to go look into the mirror of the past. I know my temperament. The more I look, the more anxious I'll get. The more I think, it'll be bad for this matter. Being calm is the best. If worst comes to worst, Chu Kong died in this lifetime, the next lifetime I can just go look for him. At worst, he'll forget me. I'll then use all my virtue and charm from the heaven and the human realm to let him fall in love with me again.

The most difficult thing of the humans is persistence.

I yawned. In front of the temple I changed of position and was ready to go to sleep. Suddenly, I heard birds chirping at the other side. It's a movement to great a new god entering heaven.

In this heaven beside I, who has been transformed into a half god by Yue Lao, it has been five hundred years since someone else has transformed into an immortal.

To heaven this is a happy event.

In my heart, I've a vague guess, but I don't dare to hope that's real.

I heard Yue Lao rushing while entering with laughter: "Haha ha! I bet right! The money is mine! My golden teals, wait for Yue Lao grandfather! I'll go pick you!"

Looking at Yue Lao's leaving back, I know I really should be happy. But the knot in my heart didn't let me take a step. What to say, what to do, I thought that I can calmly face it again. But when the reunion comes, I just only know now that at an important moment not knowing what to do, can be forgiven.

I was still hesitating while suddenly at the horizon a black figure driving a black cloud is swaying leisurely to Yue Lao temple.

He came really slowly like he could fall at any time. I couldn't help

myself anymore from wanting to go help him to let him drive the dark clouds steadily.

I didn't even get to lift my hand; the man in the sky came down straight on the carpet made of clouds in front of the temple. A "pu" sound can be heard like a fart from a soul.

I blinked and looked at the man who is having a difficult time of getting his head out of the carpet made of clouds.

He is such a sorry figure. Hair being fried by lightening. Dirty face. His clothes are so dirty that you can't see the color anymore. But I don't need to see his appearance; I can know who he is.

"Fuck!"

He stood up and patted his clothes.

"Are you blind? Don't you know how to come and help xiaoye?!"

I don't know why, my eyes actually turned somewhat red.

"Chu Kong....."

He is really as strong as I imagined. He got his last immortal soul himself. He cultivated into an immortal with his own effort. He overcome his misfortune and brought a complete him to me.

Hearing me calling him, Chu Kong also hesitated. Then he frowned and rubbed his forehead. Quite upset, he said: "No.....wait wait. Don't hurry. Wait till I change my identity for a little bit. I need to ponder about which tone I should use to talk to you. Really confusing."

Seven lifetimes, I saw too many different types of Chu Kong. He probably is even more confused than me.

However, what does it matter? Because all the people in my memories there is only him. This is my fortunate thing.

But before being fortunate.....

I held out my hand and said with not a so friendly tone: "Ten copper coins. Because of you, I lost them. You need to pay me back."

Chu Kong blinked and looked at me for a while. He stared at me in disbelief and said: "Xiaoye cultivated into an immortal like a mad man to come see you and my waistband is gone because of the lightening! You actually want me to give you ten copper coins? Where can I dig out ten copper coins for you?!"

"Don't have?"

I raised an eyebrow and said with a serious tone: "Don't pay me money back? Then give me your person. Pay me back with your body!"

Chu Kong was stunned. He looked away and touched his nose. He whispered: "Hasn't it already been yours a long time ago....." (awwww)

My heart went soft. I rushed forward. I didn't care how sorry Chu Kong looked at this moment. I also didn't care how dirty his face is. I bit Chu Kong's lip. Then I released him: "I stamped it! From today on you're my worker! All money that you earn will be mine!"

Chu Kong was severely shocked. He looked at me in daze for a moment and then sighed helplessly: "This thing isn't done like how you did it."

He dropped his head. His lips touched my lips. A warm touch. It gradually deepened and slowly turned moist.

Opposite of what his temperament is, he carefully thought me how to do this thing. Perhaps in the future, he'll teach me more things..... uh, serious things.....

**END**

# Lu Hai Kong's special

---

Another night that snow didn't rest.

The carbon in the fire pot slowly burned, making the room warm.

Lu Hai Kong frowned and slowly opened his eyes. The right eye is muddy, the left eye is clear. There's always a side that's dark in his world.

He blinked to disperse the sleepiness. The first hangover in his life. It made the inexperienced him have a splitting headache.

Lu Hai Kong rubbed his forehead and sat up.

"Woken up?"

A woman's gentle voice sounded in his ears. For a moment Lu Hai Kong was startled. In the past, only Yun Xiang will stay by his side at this time. Lu Hai Kong was lost in his thoughts. Before he looked up and saw who the person is, a pair of soft hands like they didn't have bones, pressed his temples. Gentle they massage him.

"Next time don't drink so much. The one who will be suffering is still yourself."

It's not Yun Xiang.....Yun Xiang will only pat his head and scold him: "Brat, the good things you don't learn. What, drink wine? You deserve to have a headache."

Moreover, now it's impossible for Yun Xiang to be by his side.....

With one movement, he shoved away the woman's hands. Lu Hai Kong looked coldly at her: "Has nobody told you? Not allowed to just enter my room and also don't touch me."

The person is Lu Lan's goddaughter named Lu Xin. She is a gentle woman.

The moment she heard those words from Lu Hai Kong, she froze. She retrieved her hands and with some helplessness and stood by

the bed.

"I'm sorry, it's godfather who lets me come. He said you got drunk last night and to let me take care of you here. Just now.....I just wanted to make you feel more comfortable."

He didn't know how to answer.

Lu Hai Kong rubbed his forehead. In his head couldn't help but pop out a figure. It has a little anger on it and jumped next to his ear: "Don't let to touch? Will you break if you get touched a little? Come, let me see if you'll really break."

He said a sentence. Almost without thinking, in his mind, he will get the answer of that person. It's like maggots in his bones, making him unable to remove it.

Lu Hai Kong only feels defeated. He lost to the haunting person in his heart. Or maybe in front of her, he has never won.

Lu Hai Kong covered his face and sighed: "You should get out. In the future.....don't freely come in my room. No matter who say it, it's still forbidden."

Lu Xin hung her head full of injustice. She was silent for a while before she whispered: "There's porridge on the table. I made it last night. It has been simmering on the fire. You should eat a little....."

If he eats it, Yun Xiang will probably get angry. Yun Xiang temper has always been bad, besides she gets jealous really easily.

Lu Hai Kong did as if he didn't hear her words and only coldly said: "Get out."

Lu Xin bit her lips. In the end, she went out.

Lu Hai Kong got of his bed and wore his shoes. He washed simply, put on armor and went out.

Outside, the snow is flying all over the sky and sprinkled on the ground, making it silver.

Lu Hai Kong frowned invisibly. Yesterday, the snow also sprinkled

like this. Last year's yesterday, the snow also sprinkled like this. The snow took away Yun Xiang and also buried her.

Lu Hai Kong's footstep went to the training grounds. It's already been a year since Yun Xiang left the world. There's emptiness in his heart. He learned to fill it with something else. He listened to Yun Xiang. He will live this lifetime well. He will use all his efforts to stay alive. He doesn't want to betray Yun Xiang's last wish.

Time passed away lightly. Three years passed away. Lu Hai Kong finished the hairpin rite. Lu Lan called him to the study: "Hai Kong, you know I trust you, but now the fight with the court turned more intense. When you go to war, you like to take great risk....."

Lu Hai Kong said: "If uncle has something to say, say it directly."

Lu Lan was silent for a moment and sighed: "I, an old man, it's not good to say too much. These few years, I also have urged it several times. Now, you already did the hairpin rite, but you don't even have a concubine. It's not that I'm forcing you to get married, but you should at least leave a descendant for your parents and also to comfort their spirits."

Lu Hai Kong looked at the ground and didn't speak.

"Can you not see that goddaughter of mine Lu Xin's mind? She waited for you so many years. She's nearly becoming an old maid!"

Lu Lan sighed.

"I know who you still miss in your heart, but Song Yun Xiang is already gone. So many years has passed, you should also put it down."

"Uncle."

Lu Hai Kong looked at Lu Lan and laughed bitterly: "The promise between Song Yun Xiang and Lu Hai Kong is not a thing to hold in the palms of the hands. She is wrapped in my bones. Now, uncle wants me to put it down. Does uncle want me cut out all of my bones and become a crippled person?"



Lu Lan was slightly angry: "You, this kid!"

"Lu Hai Kong has never picked up Song Yun Xiang and is more not qualified to put her down."

After saying that, he bowed deeply to Lu Lan.

"Uncle, sorry. That Lu Xin lady, you should advise her to marry another."

After talking to Lu Lan, Lu Hai Kong didn't return to his room. He turned and went to the little yard where Yun Xiang used to live.

The furnishing here is the same as before. Not even a half point has been moved. Only the breath of that person has disappeared.

Lu Hai Kong quietly lay on the couch. He curled himself. Suddenly he remembered that time when they were on their way to the north; he had nightmares ever night. Yun Xiang patted his back then again and again to comfort him.

In fact Lu Hai Kong knows; every night she didn't sleep well. He hated the him who couldn't get out of the nightmare. He also felt sorry for Yun Xiang. After, he couldn't stop himself from being more dependent on her.

The feelings he has for Yun Xiang are feelings between a man and a woman. There's also many things mixed beside the feelings of a man and a woman. In this life, there's no one who can replace those things.

A bunch of frantic footsteps came to the little lard. Lu Hai Kong's heart tightened. He sat up. His reminiscing expression instantly disappeared.

With a "zhi ya" sound, the door was pushed open by someone. Lu Xin stood at the door and looked in the room for a while. Her feet were about to come in, Lu Hai Kong coldly stopped her: "Don't move."

He got off the couch and walked to Lu Xin.

"If you have something to say, say it outside."

He didn't want to let anything to destroy the quietness in this room.

Lu Xin stared at him with red eyes. The always docile her seemed to not have heard Lu Hai Kong's words. She hung her head and asked: "Godfather say.....you let me to marry another."

Lu Hai Kong frowned: "Talk outside."

His heels wanted to head out of the room, but his hand has been grabbed by Lu Xin who stood at the doorway.

"I can not have a title. I just want to be by your side. Hai Kong, don't drive me away, alright?"

"Don't quarrel here, Yun Xiang will be angry."

This sentence is like opening the scar on Lu Xin's chest. She looked at Lu Hai Kong.

Tears flowed to outside: "Why is it Song Yun Xiang again?! Why up to now, are you still abiding to the rules she left?! Hai Kong, be a little more sober. Look carefully, there's no Song Yun Xiang by your side anymore. She gone.....she's already gone....."

After her last words, Lu Xin couldn't make any sounds. Perhaps, she also knew that that speech simply can't shake the position of Yun Xiang in Lu Hai Kong's heart.

Lu Hai Kong shook away Lu Xin's hand that was holding his hand. He said softly: "Yun Xiang has never left me any rules. I also know she is gone."

"Why do you have to preserve?!"

Lu Xin wept: "It's alright if you don't like me, but why..... do you want me to lose to a dead person? So not willing....."

Actually, there isn't only Lu Xin who is not willing. Lu Hai Kong dropped his eyes: "In my world, there hasn't been anyone who has won her."

Including himself.

Spring comes late beyond the Great Wall. When the weed has

turned green, the army is ready to go, intending to launch a full scale attack on the Heaven Dynasty.

Lu Hai Kong put on the general's armor. Before the time for the army to depart, first he alone went to a small hillside. There is a small courtyard there. No one is in the courtyard. Only solitary grave is there.

Lu Hai Kong took out the wine. He stood quietly for a while in front of the grave. Then he opened the jar of wine. He poured the wine down the grave.

"Yun Xiang, I'm going to war. This time, if I can come back, I'll definitely bring back that third prince's head for you as a sacrifice."

Warm, soft spring air blew over. The loose hairs on Lu Hai Kong's shoulder have been raised by the wind. Black hair mixed with gray hair. His hair is a mottled gray.

Lu Hai Kong's mouth lifted. He seemed to have thought of some wonderful things.

"Wait till I come back, I'll accompany you every day in this small courtyard. Watching the sunrise and sunset together, drinking wine together, talk about the sky and speak about the ground. See, I've learned to drink."

No one answered him. Lu Hai Kong sadly dropped his eyes.

The city's horn sounded. It's Lu Lan calling the army together.

Lu Hai Kong touched the stone grave. Then he put down the jar and turned to leave.

This war lasted for two full years. In two years, the Heaven dynasty admitted defeat. The last battle, there was only guards sticking to the capital. What shocked people is that the one who led the troops to block the army of the north turned out to be the third prince, the one who everyone thought was a fool.

In the barrack, Lu Lan frowned while pondering. There is a man sitting on his left. His hair is white. That man is Lu Hai Kong who is

actually only twenty two years old. Lu Lan looked up and asked: "Hai Kong, is there a way to quickly capture the capital?"

Lu Hai Kong smiled: "This day, does uncle still have to worry? The army of the north has surrounded the capital. It's only a dead city now. After the army in the capital is exhausted, we'll naturally win without fighting."

No one is more eager for victory than Lu Hai Kong. No one is also more patient than him. The wish of so many years, today it can be settled. He would like to see more panic faces of the other party.

Suddenly, sound of drums came from outside the tent. Lu Hai Kong and Lu Lan exchanged a glance. They have suspicion in their hearts. A battle? With that capital? The third prince must've gone crazy.

The third prince laughed: "General Lu, long time no see? Do you still remember me? That time you took away my wife. I thought about it for some time. Now I can finally see my first wife. We should be like that time; waiting for general Lu together, alright?"

See his first wife again.....

Lu Hai Kong's eyes turned darker.

Suddenly the third prince took something from the people behind him. The third prince grinned. He lifted the red cloth covering that thing. In it there's actually a set of bones! The joints of the bones have been nailed together. No movement can be done. It looked particularly stiff.

Lu Hai Kong's pupils tightened.

The third prince continued to say: "Bringing Yun Xiang back from beyond the Great Wall is really not easy. The flesh on her body is gone; only leaving such a thing. All these years, she didn't live well at your north. Ah.....that's right, see her bones are hurt. When my subordinate came back with her, we found this needle in her bones. This silver needle is something I gave her when she went with you. A needle through the bone and took her life."

Clenched fists are dead tight. Lu Hai Kong glared at the third prince

and faced the malevolent words. That bastard dared.....he dared!

Seeing Lu Hai Kong like that, the third prince seemed happy. He lifted the hand of the bones and smiled: "General Lu, do you still want to see the look of Yun Xiang greeting you? Is it like this or like this?"

He pulled her hand back and forth. How can the nail that is penetrated in the bones put up with such action? A "ka" sound can be heard. The arm has been snapped down by the third prince.

"Aiya.....sorry, I went overboard," the third prince smiled unapologetically.

Lu Hai Kong couldn't contain the anger in his heart anymore. He jumped up. He actually intended to rush to them alone.

"General, don't!"

The soldier behind him wanted to stop him, but Lu Hai Kong is already so angry that he can't listen to anything.

The third prince grinned: "Launch the arrows."

The archers at his side has already prepared arrows with poison on them. Hearing the command, arrows poured down on Lu Hai Kong. Even if the martial art of Lu Hai Kong is really good, he also couldn't avoid receiving two arrows. But he didn't stop his footsteps. It looked like the injuries on him aren't painful. The poison spread in his blood. Lu Hai Kong suppressed the smell of fish in his throat.

What does all of these matter.....compared to the dismay when seeing Yun Xiang's bones, what do all of these matter?

He didn't protect Yun Xiang. Even her bones, he couldn't protect.....

"Ah," Lu Hai Kong shouted loudly. He used his internal energy and leaped on the wall of the capital. Everyone was shocked. The third prince also didn't expect that this person's martial art is so sturdy. He took two steps back.

Lu Hai Kong snatched a sword from a soldier behind him. His murderous aura is stirring. The anger and pain in his heart can only

be settled with blood.

The north army under the wall has some commotion. Lu Lan armored a horse and shouted: "Attack the capital."

The battle began.

At this time, half of the soldiers on the wall have already been cleaned by Lu Hai Kong. His whole body was covered in blood, making it difficult to tell if it's his or someone else's. He is just peering at the third prince. Anyone who came to block his path have been gotten rid of like cutting melon without feelings.

"Give Yun Xiang back to me."

Without emotion he attacked the ones protecting the third prince.

From the public's eyes, seeing this person covered in poisonous arrows and also marching forward with firm steps, he's like a monster who doesn't know pain and who isn't afraid of death. Even with only the murderous aura on his body, he is able to scare people.

Actually, it's just that Lu Hai Kong couldn't see anything else. He only had one eye and that one eye is filled with Song Yun Xiang. Nothing can be filled in it anymore.

The third prince looked at Lu Hai Kong. Suddenly he smiled strangely: "You want her? Alright, I'll give her to you."

After saying that, he flung Yun Xiang's bones like a rag and threw it under the wall. And there, there are millions of soldiers fighting. The bones being stamped among soldiers has been turned into dust.

Lu Hai Kong was startled and looked lost for a moment. The moment he looked up, his chill eyes cause people to tremble.

The last battle, Lu Hai Kong cut off the third prince's head. He killed on the wall and made it a murderous field.

The last battle, Lu Hai Kong received twenty nine arrows. Poison went in the heart. After he has been rescued, he lied in bed for a whole month before he woke up. When he woke up, he saw Lu Lan's face. He only said one sentence: "What meaning does it have

to save me.....”

All the things in this world seemed to have no relation with him. He has taken revenge. His enemy is gone. Yun Xiang is gone. What he is facing, is a life with nightmares every night. Again and again, he saw Yun Xiang disappear from his sight.

What meaning does it have to save him.....

Lu Lan became the new emperor. The owner of the country. Lu Hai Kong went back alone to the north. He didn't bring back the third prince's head, because there, Yun Xiang is already gone.

Five years later.

On a small courtyard outside the city, Lu Hai Kong's spirit is suddenly good today. He shook a cup of wine and walked to the front of the grave. He fell on the grave. His hair is like snow, making his face appear pale.

He knows that Yun Xiang is no longer here. Five years ago when he returned here, this grave has been dug and was a mess, leaving only a large pit. Lu Hai Kong filled it back as a remembrance.

Yun Xiang is not here, where should he go?

Lu Hai Kong dropped his head. His expression unreadable.

He went back to the house and quietly lay down. Suddenly Lu Hai Kong remembered a long time ago. That time Yun Xiang and he are still little. One of them is the lady of Xiangfu. One of them is the general's son. Yun Xiang did something wrong and was punished by kneeling in the hall. He went to accompany her and slept the whole night on her knees. The next day, when he woke up, he saw Yun Xiang's saliva dripping out of her mouth above his head.

While she touched her mouth, she said: “Lu Hai Kong.....stupid.....”

She saw him in her dream. So good.

Lu Hai Kong closed his eyes and seemed to hear Yun Xiang scolding him softly above his head again: “Lu Hai Kong, stupid.”

At that time, the sunlight was warm and soft; their childhood sweetness.....



# Zihui's special

---

Among the morning mist, under the wisterias, a woman in green clothes motionlessly let the wisteria fell on her. She smiled quietly.

“Who are you?”

“My name is Jin Luo and who are you?”

Who?

Every night, the little monk will suddenly open his eyes. An empty look.

The bright moonlight spilled through the window into the room, making the little monk's face seem a little pale. He rolled over and shrunk in the quilt. It's that dream again. It's that girl again. Every time he woke up, he would not be able to remember her name or her appearance. But in his heart there's always an inexplicable familiar feeling as if he knew her.

“Well.....*Wu Nian*<sup>[1]</sup>, did you dream again,” the senior sleeping in the same bed as him asked. “Don't pull my quilt.”

Wu Nian muffled: “Sorry, senior.”

He has a dreaming illness. He can't sleep well. Sometimes, he'll wake up while shouting. His family thought he was possessed. Since his childhood, they took him to temple on the mountain to let him live there.

Every day after reciting the dharma, his illness will get a lot better. But occasionally, he'll still wake up at night and can't remember the things he dreamed off. Just his heart will feel empty.

Early in the morning, after the morning classes finished, Fang Zhang called Wu Nian away. He commanded Wu Nian to go live at the back mountain and to help the elderly monk take care of the back mountain. Wu Nian nicely complied and in the afternoon, he picked up his things and went to the back mountain.

Outside of the house on the back mountain, there's a huge wisteria tree. No one knows which predecessor planted it. Kong Dao monk is already old and couldn't do many things anymore. All the things that needed to be done to take care of the back mountain have been handed over to Wu Nian.

Wu Nian got this job, but he didn't work as sincere and good as before. Always lost in thoughts while looking at the wisterias. For this reason, he doesn't know how many slaps he has suffered.

Year after years, he observed the wisterias blooming and falling. Unconsciously ten years has passed. Kong Dao monk passed away. He now lives alone at the back mountain. He slowly became from a little monk to a big monk.

That day, the wind was breezing and it was sunny. The wisterias were just blooming. A string of flowers poured down like waterfall. In the sunlight, it turned the yard in a dream like purple.

As usual, Wu Nian was holding a broom and looking up at the wisterias in blankly absence. Suddenly he heard a girl's stunning praise: "What beautiful wisterias!"

Wu Nian turned around to look. A girl dressed in light yellow skirts walked from that side of the mountain and stood not far away from the wisteria tree. She looked up at the wisteria and forgot to close her mouth in amazement. The girl stood for a long moment before she saw Wu Nian at the side. She was shocked again and exclaimed: "What a beautiful monk!"

Wu Nian lowered his eyes, turned and began to slowly cleaning.

That girl covered her mouth and seemed to know that those words were somewhat out of line. She blushed and rushed to explain: "Sorry, sorry, *dashi*<sup>2</sup>, don't mind me. I didn't want to offend you.....I just have a loose tongue."

Since the other party has said that, Wu Nian thought it wouldn't be good to fuss over it anymore. He bowed and said: "*Emitufo*<sup>[3]</sup>, *shizu*<sup>[4]</sup>, help yourself.

The girl scratched her head while smiling: "It's good if you just don't blame for being out of line."

The girl's words hardly left, suddenly Fang Zhang came from the small road.

"Nushizu (female version of shizu) walks too fast. It's difficult for this old monk to catch up."

The girl stuck her tongue out. Fang Zhang turned to look at Wu Nian and commanded: "It's good that Wu Nian is also here. This is the Miss from Shi fu down the mountain. Her body isn't well. She needs to come live in the mountains for some days. The back mountain is a quiet place. In the future, Wu Nian, take care of Miss Shi."

Wu Nian hesitated. He didn't even find ground for refusal when he heard the girl's hearty chuckle: "Wu Nian dashi, this little girl, Shi Qian, will be in dashi's care."

Wu Nian opened his mouth, but didn't know what to say.

After Shi Qian came to live at the back mountain, the time of Wu Nian staring in daze at the wisteria tree has become less and less. This girl who has a straightforward temperament and who loves to laugh is always in some kind of situation that made him helpless. Always saying many things that made him speechless. Always doing a lot of things that made him didn't know if he should cry or laugh.

Every day, she can make the quiet back mountain into a very noisy place. At day time, Wu Nian is endless fatigue. At night, the moment he touch the pillow and closes his eyes, he'll immediately fall asleep. There is no time to dream about that dream.

Day after day, he became accustomed to the noisy Shi Qian beside him. When looking at her, he no longer can see something else.

The wisteria bloomed a lifetime beside them. One day, Shi Qian has been taken down the mountain by the people of her fu to celebrate her father's birthday.

In Wu Nian's eyes he can finally look at the waterfall of the wisterias.

On a day where the sky is blue, his mind suddenly flashed a scene. A green dressed girl standing below the wisteria tree, looking at them motionlessly. Her side profile is so beautiful, making people afraid to touch it.

“My name is Jin Luo.....”

She spoke softly and then lowered her eyes. On her lips hung a smile, but her eyes seemed to be about to shed tears.

“Do you still remember me.....”

A breeze blew. The wisteria petals fell on the ground. Wu Nian’s spirits suddenly returned. His cheeks are wet.

“What....”

Wu Nian was a little startled. His fingertips touched the droplets sliding down from his eyes. Why did his tears fall?

That night, Shi Qian didn’t return to the mountain. Wu Nian carried a bit of worry and slowly fell asleep.

He dreamed again of that long absent dream. The emotions of the green dressed girl in his dream seemed so real in his mind. The temperature of her palm, the taste of her lips, her beautiful features. She called over and over again the name “*Zihui*<sup>[5]</sup>”. Over and over, she said: “I’ll wait for you.”

He saw her in a room made of stone, waiting for a whole lifetime. He felt that this woman is important to him. Maybe even the most important.....

But when he woke up, only Shi Qian was sitting at his bedside. Her eyes are red from crying. And Wu Nian can no longer remember the longing of that dream.

He raised his hand and touched Shi Qian’s head. He felt heartache for her distress.

“What’s the matter?”

His voice hid the affection he felt for Shi Qian.

“I.....yesterday, I returned to Shi fu. My father said.....”

Shi Qian couldn't stop her tears from falling down.

“My father said, he promised me to a family. He.....wants me to marry.”

Wu Nian was startled. Shi Qian looked like she couldn't hold it anymore and rushed forward. She clung to Wu Nian's neck.

“I like you! I only like Wu Nian! I don't want to marry someone else! I only like you!”

Outside the house, the shadow of the wisterias shook. His ears seemed to be invaded by the words of another woman. That person said: “Zihui, I like you.”

She said: “Zihui, let's get married, alright?”

She said: “In the future, I'll always be by your side. I'll be your wife.”

At this moment, he suddenly has the urge to push Shi Qian away. Suddenly, he felt a sense of guilt winding in his heart. Suddenly he remembered.....has he forgotten a very important matter?

Shi Qian didn't get Wu Nian's comfort. She let go of him. Somewhat afraid, she looked at him: “Wu Nian.....are you angry? I know you're a monk, but so many days, I thought you.....”

Her voice got smaller and carried grievances that can't be said: “I thought you also like me.”

This sentence let Wu Nian's spirit return. He looked at Shi Qian's face full of grievances. Those inexplicable thoughts and those memories that never existed dissipated like smoke. What is left is only this time. Shi Qian accompanying him every day. The warmth and love that he is afraid to broach.

Wu Nian blinked, pondered for a while and smiled helplessly: “I think, I also like you.”

Shi Qian's eyes lit up.

In a year's time, being together from morning till night. Shi Qian is

originally a girl that will let people like her. Wu Nian is really Wu Nian (without longing). Finally, he also has longing now.

He sighed: "Then, should we prepare to run away?"

He thought that this woman is worth to give up everything to protect her.

Shi Qian stared at him blankly and immediately nodded.

While carrying a luggage, Wu Nian held Shi Qian's hand and walked down the small road to go down the mountain. Before leaving, Wu Nian turned back and looked. Between his trances, he seemed to see a green dressed girl standing under the wisteria tree. She looked at him. There was a mild bitter curvature on her lips.

Wu Nian's steps stopped. He saw her lips moved. She seemed to say: "*Goodbye, forever*<sup>[6]</sup>."

He was a little startled. His heart felt an inexplicable pain.

In a blink of eye, a big breeze blew. Wisteria petals flew in the sky.

Shi Qian turned around and looked confused at Wu Nian: "Wu Nian?"

Wu Nian stared blankly for a while. Then he shook his head and continued to walk down. He said: "When we're down the mountain, help me make a name. I can no longer be called Wu Nian."

Shi Qian winked, pondered for a while and suddenly laughed: "Oh, does that mean that in your heart you have me? Are you saying that you're not able to be alone anymore? This is really nice! Don't worry, when we're down the mountain, I'll give you a nice name....."

Wu Nian smiled stiffly. He doesn't know how to deny.

Perhaps the yearning in the depth of his soul is no match for the warm friendship that accompanied him every day. Just like that mortals are no match for the emptiness of the heart. Who would not choose a haven that'll make him feel warm in time of weakness?

Even if.....that's not the place where he originally wanted to go.

No matter how unfeeling or how without longing he is, after all he is

just a mortal.

Footsteps slowly mixed in the crowd. A breeze passed by, leaving only ruined flowers to bring the next year.

Author has something to say: I really thought a long time about this special chapter.....because I really didn't want to write the past story of Zihui and Jin Luo (because I think, I'll write it really bad). So I wrote such a story. In fact, this story has been compared to Lu Hai Kong's story. I asked a sister before making a decision. Lu Hai Kong is too pure and too clean, like someone from a dream. That's right, for girls Lu Hai Kong is a dream. And this story of Zihui is more of a realistic portrayal. He'll forget that person of his past. Then he'll start a new life. It's not to say how fickle Zihui's feelings are, but it's that everyone has a weak moments and selfishness. Why not choose a better life for oneself? Women are like that. Men should also be like that. Maybe putting the past down is the most difficult choice.

In addition this story also wants to tell a truth that a Jiu's mom told a Jiu: "When he likes you, he really liked you. When he likes someone else, he also really likes that person."

Personally I think, people are probably like that. Eating what's inside the bowl, watching what's inside the pot.....

Finally, everyone, don't take this story too seriously ==

---

## Notes

1. 無念 (*Wúniàn*): free of thoughts/ no longing. His name means that he doesn't have anything he wants to remember.
2. 大師 (*dàshī*): master/ great master. Usually used to call monks and leaders of a sect.
3. 阿彌陀佛 (*Āmítuófó*): may the lord Buddha preserve us.
4. 施主 (*shīzhǔ*): designation of a person by a monk
5. 紫輝 (*Zǐ huī*): Zihui's name means shining purple or bright purple.
6. What she said is 後會無期 (*hòuhuìwúqī*): meeting postponed indefinitely/ to

*meet again at unspecified date. Most of the time people will say 後會有期 (hòuhuìyǒuqī): hope to see you again/ I'm sure we'll meet again some day. Jin Luo said to meet again at an unspecified date meaning that they'll never meet again.*



# CK and XXZ special: Happy Life?

---

After Chu Kong came back, the first one he went to see was Xiao Xiang Zi. It let the Jade emperor send two emissaries over to drag him to the celestial palace.

In this seven lifetimes' tour through the human realm and the netherworld, Xiao Xiang Zi and Chu Kong got rid of a bad immortal that harmed the living beings. She, herself slightly transformed into one of the two unmarried youths in heaven, bringing the public a lot of joy.

Jade emperor's opened his mouth. He pounded on the table and decided: "Well, need rewarding."

So the two people stood neatly in front of the hall and heard what for reward they've gotten. Chu Kong's official post is reinstated, his salary rose with five teals and one courtyard is awarded with four servants. Xiao Xiang Zi is promoted to the same rank as Yue Lao immortal. Still working at Yue Lao temple, helping Yue Lao sort out the red strings with a monthly salary of five teals.

"In addition."

Jade emperor touched his beard.

"When are you two planning on doing that matter?"

Xiao Xiang Zi was immersed in the joy of getting a salary of five teals and didn't hear what he said after that.

Chu Kong replied without hesitation: "As soon as possible."

Jade emperor rubbed his beard in satisfaction: "You should make big arrangements for this wedding of yours."

Chu Kong led Xiao Xiang Zi away from the celestial palace. Far away, the sound of Jade emperor's big laughter can be heard among the lamenting of the officials: "I said right off that these two things will be together! Come, pay me money, pay me money!"

Chu Kong did as if he never heard it. He held Xiao Xiang Zi's hand and leisurely walked down the stairs to the celestial palace.

Xiao Xiang Zi has been covering her mouth while snickering: "Now, I'm also someone who has a salary. Now, I'm also someone who has a salary."

Compared to Xiao Xiang Zi's pure joy at this moment, Chu Kong just soared. He remembered many things of the past. The taste of his heart felt complicated. He didn't have enough time to sort out his emotional state, when a shadow suddenly enveloped the two.

They looked up. Heavenly emperor Tuo Ta Lee stood magnificent before them. A face hid behind a big beard. His eyes are dark that they are difficult to see through.

Chu Kong's intuition told him that heavenly emperor Lee is angry this time. Suddenly he saw a white onion—with a "pa" sound it patted on heavenly emperor Lee's belly. Xiao Xiang Zi laughed a little crazy: "Big bearded Lee, before you wanted me live a life of the little wife chasing the husband. Look, who is chasing who, ah? Have you even calculated one lifetime correct in these seven lifetimes?"

These words made Chu Kong's face paled. Heavenly emperor Lee also shook his beard. Xiao Xiang Zi pulled Chu Kong's arm: "We matters to attend. We'll go ahead."

After walking for a while, Xiao Xiang Zi turned and saw that Chu Kong's expression isn't very good. Her heart pondered for a while, narrowed her eyes and said: "Is it that you don't want to admit to the fact that you really chased me for seven lifetimes?"

Chu Kong laughed: "I admit. Why shouldn't I admit? Left and right, you're a bag that only I can use. As long as you're no match for me in the future, is the past still important?"

Xiao Xiang Zi's raised an eyebrow: "Do you want to try having a match?"

Chu Kong turned to look at Xiao Xiang Zi. He raised his hand and pinched her cheek. While smiling evilly, he said: "Don't hurry; we still have a long time to go."

[Married]

The night that Xiao Xiang Zi and Chu Kong got married, all the immortals were drunk. Without such a happy event for a long time, everyone seemed to discharge a lot.

Chu Kong entered the wedding chamber and saw his newly wed wife sitting quietly on the bed. His heart shook intolerable. Such a quiet Xiao Xiang Zi is really a too rare sight. He stood in front of Xiao Xiang Zi for a long time. Xiao Xiang Zi also didn't hurry. She quietly waited for him to lift her red veil.

Due to the fact that Xiao Xiang Zi is really too quiet, Chu Kong couldn't bear to break the silence. But without lifting the veil, things can't be done.....Chu Kong pondered and decided to nevertheless lift Xiao Xiang Zi's veil. Then.....his expression suddenly became stiff.

His bride under the veil has a mouth full of oil after eating. Chu Kong sighed: "I just know that too quiet is definitely not a good thing....."

Xiao Xiang Zi looked aggrieved once at Chu Kong and muttered: "This marriage is really unequal. You eat and drink outside and I need to suffer hunger inside. I was so hungry that I just needed to get something to eat. Otherwise, if we get married next time, we can change. I'll go outside and greet them. You wait inside. I saw a lot of good wine....."

Chu Kong rubbed the veins that were about to explode on his forehead.

"This sort of thing had better not to have a next time!"

Xiao Xiang Zi with a mouth full of oil contented touched her stomach.

"It's better to do things while being full."

Chu Kong blushed and looked away.

"What.....what did you eat?"

Xiao Xiang Zi lifted her fingers and began to count. Chu Kong glared at her for quite a while and saw that she was still counting, he

sighed. He scratched his head and then his heart became ruthless. He grabbed Xiao Xiang Zi's chin and smiled with squinted eyes: "I know you're stupid. I'll personally try it."

"What....."

His lips touched his wife's. His tongue gently touched Xiao Xiang Zi's lips and then went in. Not entangling for long, Chu Kong released her. Xiao Xiang Zi asked curiously: "Have you tasted what I've eaten?"

Chu Kong's expression was serious: "No, I need to explore more carefully."

Then he used one whole night to carefully explore.....

The next morning, when Xiao Xiang Zi woke up, she asked very persistently: "In the end, have you tasted what I ate yesterday?"

Chu Kong raised his hand and brought her in his embrace. He pressed her down and firmly replied: "Me."

[Star Observatory]

The two things moved into the courtyard that the Jade emperor gifted. They lived a happy life mixed with somewhat noise. They brought the deer horse demon to heaven, saying it's a riding horse, but in fact he's treated like a pet.

This evening, Ying Shi came looking for Chu Kong: "Chu Kong *gege*<sup>[1]</sup>, let's go watch the stars.

Chu Kong pondered and then nodded: "En, alright."

Then he shouted: "Xiao Xiang Zi, let's go to the Star Observatory to watch stars."

Timely, Xiao Xiang Zi is brushing the deer horse' demon's hairs. Upon hearing this, she patted the deer horse demon's head: "Do you want to go to watch the stars tonight?"

The deer horse demon humphed while nodding. So Xiao Xiang Zi said: "I'll go after I finish brushing."

After Chu Kong passed those words to Ying Shi, Ying Shi smiled a little and said: “There’s someone waiting there for me. I’ll go first.”

However when the two of them arrived at the Star Observatory, they didn’t see Ying Shi and that “someone else”. Xiao Xiang Zi scratched her head: “Can it be that they aren’t watching the stars here?”

Chu Kong sat down on the ground. While looking at the star’s road, he said: “It’s just right with nobody here. It’s quiet.”

Xiao Xiang Zi also sat down. Suddenly, she remembered something: “Ah, after seeing the stars, I suddenly remembered. These two days, I forgot to tell you. I’m pregnant.”

Chu Kong nodded indifferently then his body stiffened: “What.....”

“I’m pregnant.”

Chu Kong’s mouth slowly fell down: “Boy or girl?”

“How should I know?”

---

## Notes

1. 哥哥 (gēgē): big brother. It doesn’t have to be a biological brother. Any guy who’s older can be called gege. It’s more intimate.

# Credits

---

---

Author

---

(九鹭非香) Jiu Lu Fei Xiang

---

Translator

---

[1314dreamer](#)

---

Book designer

---

[Armaell](#)